



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

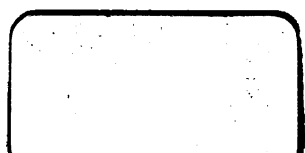
About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 07492581 3



[REDACTED]

ND 7



Wm. Arthur.
H U D I B R A S

IN

THREE PARTS.

WRITTEN IN

THE TIME OF THE LATE WARS.

By SAMUEL BUTLER, Esq.

WITH
ANNOTATIONS,
AND
AN INDEX.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR VERNOR AND HOOD, W. OTRIDGE
AND SON, J. CUTHELL, J. WALKER, R. FAULDER,
LACKINGTON, ALLEN, AND CO. OGILVY AND
SON, R. LEA, W. J. AND J. RICHARDSON, AND
J. NUNN.

1805,

Printed by Biggs, and Co. Crane-Court, Fleet-Street

THE
AUTHOR's LIFE.

SAMUEL BUTLER, the Author of this excellent Poem, was born in the parish of Strensham, in the county of Worcester, and baptized there the 13th of Feb. 1612. His father, who was of the same name, was an honest country farmer, who had some small estate of his own, but rented a much greater of the Lord of the Manor where he lived. However, perceiving in this son an early inclination to learning, he made a shift to have him educated in the free-school at Worcester, under Mr. Henry Bright; where having passed the usual time, and being become an excellent school-scholar, he went for some little time to Cambridge, but was never matriculated into that University, his father's abilities not being sufficient to be at the charge of an academical education; so that our Author returned soon into his native county, and became clerk to one Mr. Jefferys, of Earl's-Croom, an eminent Justice of the Peace for that County, with whom he lived some years, in an easy and no contemptible service. Here by the indulgence of a kind master, he had sufficient leisure to apply himself to whatever learning his inclinations led him, which were chiefly history and poetry; to which, for his diversion, he joined music and painting; and I have seen some pictures, said to be of his drawing, which remained in that family; which I mention not for the excellency of them, but to satisfy the reader of his early inclinations to that noble art; for which also he was afterwards entirel

beloved by Mr. Samuel Cooper, one of the most eminent painters of his time.

He was after this recommended to that great encourager of learning, Elizabeth Countess of Kent, where he had not only the opportunity to consult all manner of learned books, but to converse also with that living library of learning, the great Mr Selden.

Our Author lived some time also with Sir Samuel Luke, who was of an ancient family in Bedfordshire ; but, to his dishonour, an eminent commander under the usurper Oliver Cromwell : and then it was, as I am informed, he composed this loyal Poem. For, though fate, more than choice, seems to have placed him in the service of a Knight so notorious, both in his person and politics, yet, by the rule of contraries, one may observe throughout his whole Poem, that he was most orthodox, both in his religion and loyalty. And I am the more induced to believe he wrote it about that time, because he had then the opportunity to converse with those living characters of rebellion, nonsense, and hypocrisy, which he so lively and pathetically exposes throughout the whole work.

After the restoration of King Charles II. those who were at the helm, minding money more than merit, our Author found that verse in Juvenal to be exactly verified in himself :

*Haud facile emergunt, quorum virtutibus obstat
Res angusta domi :*

And being endued with that innate modesty, which rarely finds promotion in princes' courts. He became Secretary to Richard Earl of Carbury, Lord President of the Principality of Wales, who made him Steward of Ludlow-Castle, when the Court there was revived. About this time he married one Mrs. Herbert, a gentlewoman of a very good family, but

TO THE READER.

POETA nascitur non fit, is a sentence of as great truth as antiquity; it being most certain, that all the acquired learning imaginable is insufficient to compleat a poet, without a natural genius and propensity to so noble and sublime an art. And we may, without offence, observe, that many very learned men, who have been ambitious to be thought poets, have only rendered themselves obnoxious to that satyirical inspiration our Author wittily invokes :

Which made them, though it were in spite
Of nature and their stars, to write.

On the one side, some who have had very little human learning, but were endued with a large share of natural wit and parts, have become the most celebrated * poets of the age they lived in. But, as these last are, "*Raræ aves in terris,*" so, when the muses have not disdained the assistances of other arts and sciences, we are then blessed with those lasting monuments of wit and learning, which may justly claim a kind of eternity upon earth. And our author, had his modesty permitted him, might, with Horace, have said,

Exegi monumentum ære perennius :

Or, with Ovid,

Jamque opus exegi, quod nec Jovis ira, nec ignis,
Nec poterit ferrum, nec edax abolere vetustas.

The Author of this celebrated Poem was of this last composition : for although he had not the happiness of an academical education, as some

* Shakespear, D'Avenant, &c.

affirm, it may be perceived; throughout his whole Poem, that he had read much, and was very well accomplished in the most useful parts of human learning.

Rapin (in his reflections) speaking of the necessary qualities belonging to a poet, tells us, he must have a genius extraordinary; great natural gifts; a wit just, fruitful, piercing, solid, and universal; an understanding clear and distinct; an imagination neat and pleasant; an elevation of soul, that depends not only on art or study, but is purely the gift of heaven, which must be sustained by a lively sense and vivacity; judgment to consider wisely of things, and vivacity for the beautiful expression of them, &c.

Now, how justly this character is due to our Author, we leave to the impartial reader, and those of nicer judgment, who had the happiness to be more intimately acquainted with him.

The reputation of this incomparable Poem is so thoroughly established in the world, that it would be superfluous, if not impertinent, to endeavour any panegyric upon it. King Charles II. whom the judicious part of mankind will readily acknowledge to be a sovereign judge of wit, was so great an admirer of it, that he would often pleasantly quote it in his conversation. However, since most men have a curiosity to have some account of such anonymous authors, whose compositions have been eminent for wit or learning, we have, for their information, subjoined a short Life of the Author.

THE AUTHOR'S LIFE.

vii

no widow, as the Oxford Antiquary has reported : she had a competent fortune, but it was most of it unfortunately lost, by being put out on ill securities, so that it was of little advantage to him. He is reported by the Antiquary to have been Secretary to his Grace George Duke of Buckingham, when he was Chancellor to the University of Cambridge ; but whether that be true or no, it is certain, the Duke had a great kindness for him, and was often a benefactor to him. But no man was a more generous friend to him, than that Mecænas of all learned and witty men, Charles Lord Buckhurst, the late Earl of Dorset and Middlesex, who, being himself an excellent poet, knew how to set a just value upon the ingenious performances of others, and has often taken care privately to relieve and supply the necessities of those, whose modesty would endeavour to conceal them ; of which our author was a signal instance, as several others have been, who are now living. In fine, the integrity of his life, the acuteness of his wit, and easiness of his conversation, had rendered him most acceptable to all men ; yet he prudently avoided a multiplicity of acquaintance, and wisely chose such only whom his discerning judgment could distinguish (as Mr. Cowley expresseth it)

From the great vulgar or the small.

And having thus lived to a good old age, admired by all, though personally known to few, he departed this life in the year 1680, and was buried at the charge of his good friend Mr. Longuevil, of the Temple, in the yard belonging to the church of St. Paul's Covent-garden, at the west-end of the said yard, on the north side, under the wall of the said church, and under that wall which parts the yard from the common highway. And since he has no monument yet set up for him, give me leave to borrow the epitaph from that of Michael Drayton, the

THE AUTHOR'S LIFE.

poet, as the author of Mr. Cowley's has partly
before me :

And though no monument can claim
To be the treasurer of thy name ;
This work, which ne'er will die, shall be
An everlasting monument to thee.





HUDIBRAS.

PART I.

CANTO I.

THE ARGUMENT.

Sir Hudibras his passing worth;
The manner how he safly'd forth.
His arms and equipage are shown;
His horse's virtues and his own.
Th' adventure of the Bear and Fiddle
Is sung, but breaks off in the middle.

WHEN civil dudgeon first grew high,
And men fell out they knew not why?
When hard words, jealousies and fears
Set folks together by the ears,
And made them fight, like mad or drunk,
For dame Religion as for punk;
Whose honesty they all durst swear for,
Tho' not a man of them knew wherefore;
When gospel-trumpeter, surrounded
With long-ear'd rout, to battle sounded,
And pulpit, drum ecclesiastick,
Was beat with fist instead of a stick;

- Then did Sir Knight abandon dwelling,
 And out he rode a colonelling.
 A wight he was whose very sight wou'd 15
 Intitle him, Mirroure of Knighthood ;
 That never bow'd his stubborn knee
 To any thing but chivalry ;
 Nor put up blow, but that which laid
 Right Worshipful on shoulder-blade : 20
 Chief of domestic Knights and errant,
 Either for chartel, or for warrant ;
 Great on the bench, great in the saddle,
 That^b could as well bind o'er as swaddle :
 Mighty he was at both of these, 25
 And styl'd of war as well as peace.
 (So some rats, of amphibious nature,
 Are either for the land or water.)
 But here our author makes a doubt,
 Whether he were more wise or stout. 30
 Some hold the one, and some the other ;
 But howsoe'er, they make a pother,
 The difference was so small, his brain
 Outweigh'd his rage but half a grain ;
 Which made some take him for a fool, 35
 That knaves do work with, call'd a fool.
 For't has been held by many, that
 As MONTAIGNEC, playing with his cat,
 Complains she thought him but an ass,
 Much more she wou'd Sir HUDIBRAS ; 40
 (For that's the name our valiant Knight
 To all his challenges did write.)
 But they're mistaken very much ;
 'Tis plain enough he was no such.
 We grant, altho' he had much wit, 45
 H' was very shy of using it ;

PART. I. CANTO I.

3

As being loth to wear it out,
 And therefore bore it not about;
 Unless on holy-days, or so,
 As men their best apparel do. 50
 Beside, 'tis known he could speak GREEK
 As naturally as pigs squeek :
 That LATIN was no more difficile,
 Than to a black-bird 'tis to whistle.
 Being rich in both, he never scanted 55
 His bounty unto such as wanted :
 But much of either wou'd afford
 To many that had not one word.
 For HEBREW roots, altho' they're found
 To flourish most in barren ground, 60
 He had such plenty, as suffic'd
 To make some^d think him circumcis'd :
 And truly so he was, perhaps ;
 Not as a proselyte, but for claps.
 He was in LOGIC a great oritick, 65
 Profoundly skill'd in ^e analytick !
 He cou'd distinguish and divide
 A hair 'twixt south and south-west side ;
 On either which he wou'd dispute,
 Confute, change hands, and still confute. 70
 He'd undertake to prove, by force
 Of argument, a man's no horse.
 He'd prove a buzzard is no fowl,
 And that a Lord may be an owl,
 A calf an Alderman, a goose a Justice, 75
 And rooks Committee-men and Trustees.
 He'd run in debt by disputation,
 And pay with ratiocination.
 All this by syllogism, true
 In mood and figure, he would do. 80

For RHETORIC, he cou'd not ope
 His mouth, but out there flew a trope :
 And when he happen'd to break off
 I' th' middle of his speech, or cough,
 H' had hard words ready to shew why, 85
 And tell what rules he did it by :
 Else, when with greatest art he spoke,
 You'd think he talk'd like other folk.
 For all a rhetorician's rules
 Teach nothing but to name his tools. 90
 But, when he pleas'd to shew't, his speech,
 In loftiness of sound, was rich ;
 A Babylonish f dialect,
 Which learned pedants much affect.
 It was a party-colour'd dress 95
 Of patch'd and pye-ball'd languages :
 'Twas English cut on Greek and Latin,
 Like fustian heretofore on satin.
 It had an odd promiscuous tone,
 As if h' had talk'd three parts in one ; 100
 Which made some think, when he did gabble,
 Th' had heard three labourers of Babel ;
 Or 8 CERBERUS himself pronounce
 A leash of languages at once.
 This he as volubly would vent 105
 As if his stock would ne'er be spent ;
 And truly to support that charge,
 He had supplies as vast and large :
 For he cou'd coin or counterfeit
 New words, with little or no wit ; 110
 Words, so debas'd and hard, no stone
 Was hard enough to touch them on :
And when with hasty noise he spoke 'em,
The ignorant for current took 'em ;

PART I. CANTO. I.

5

That had the ^h orator, who once 115
 Did fill his mouth with pebble stones
 When he harangu'd, but known his phrase,
 He would have us'd no other ways.
 In MATHEMATICKS he was greater
 Than ⁱ TYCHO BRAHE or ERRA PATER: 120
 For he, by geometrick scale,
 Could take the size of pots of ale;
 Resolve, by sines and tangents, straight,
 If bread or butter wanted weight;
 And wisely tell what hour o' th' day 125
 The clock does strike, by algebra.
 Beside, he was a shrewd PHILOSOPHER,
 And had read ev'ry text and gloss over:
 Whate'er the crabbed'st author hath,
 He understood b' implicit faith: 130
 Whatever ^k Sceptic cou'd enquire for,
 For ev'ry why, he had a wherefore;
 Knew more than forty of them do,
 As far as words and terms cou'd go:
 All which he understood by rote, 135
 And, as occasion serv'd, would quote:
 No matter whether right or wrong,
 They might be either said or sung.
 His notions fitted things so well,
 That which was which he could not tell; 140
 But oftentimes mistook the one
 For th' other, as great clerks have done.
 He cou'd^l reduce all things to acts,
 And knew their natures by abstracts;
 Where entity and quiddity, 145
 The ghost of defunct bodies, fly;
 Where ^m truth in person does appear,
 Like words ⁿ congeal'd in northern air.

He knew what's what, and that's as high
 As metaphysic wit can fly.
 In school-divinity as able
 As o he that hight, Irrefragable ;
 A second P THOMAS, or, at once
 To name them all, another DUNCE :
 Profound in all the nominal
 And real ways beyond them all ;
 For he a rope of sand cou'd twist
 As q tough as learned SORBONIST ;
 And weave fine cobwebs, fit for scull
 That's empty when the moon is full ;
 Such as take lodgings in a head
 That's to be let unfurnished.
 He cou'd raise scruples dark and nice,
 And after solve 'em in a trice ;
 As if divinity had catch'd
 The itch on purpose to be scratch'd ;
 Or, like a mountebank, did wound
 And stab herself with doubts profound,
 Only to shew with how small pain
 The sores of faith are cur'd again ;
 Altho' by woeful proof we find
 They always leave a scar behind.
 He knew r the seat of paradise,
 Cou'd tell in what degree it lies ;
 And, as he was dispos'd, cou'd prove it
 Below the moon, or else above it :
 What АДАМ dreamt of, when his bride
 Came from her closet in his side ;
 Whether the devil tempted her
 By a s High-Dutch interpreter :
If either of them t had a navel :
Who first u made music malleable ;

PART I. CANTO. I.

7

Whether the serpent, at the fall,
Had cloven feet or none at all.
All this, without a gloss or comment, 185
He cou'd unriddle in a moment,
In proper terms, such as men smatter,
When they throw out, and miss the matter.

For his RELIGION, it was fit
To match his learning and his wit : 190
'Twas Presbyterian true blue ;
For he was of that stubborn crew
Of errant Saints whom all men grant
To be the true Church Militant ;
Such as do build their faith upon 195
The holy text of pike and gun ;
Decide all controversies by

Infallible artillery ;
And prove their doctrine orthodox
By apostolic blows and knocks : 200
Call fire, and sword, and desolation,
A godly thorough reformation,
Which always must be carry'd on,
And still be doing, never done :
As if Religion were intended 205
For nothing else but to be mended.

A sect whose chief devotion lies
In odd perverse antipathies ;
In falling out with that or this,
And finding somewhat still amiss : 210
More peevish, cross, and splenetick,
Than dog distract, or monkey sick ;
That with more care keep holy-day
The wrong, than others the right way :

Compound for sins they are inclin'd to, 215
By damning those they have no mind to :

Still so perverse and opposite,
 As if they worship'd God for spite.
 The self-same thing they will abhor
 One way, and long another for. 220
 Free-will they one way disavow;
 Another, nothing else allow.

All piety consists therein
 In them, in other men all sin.
 Rather than fail, they will decry 225

That which they love most tenderly;
 Quarrel with mix'd-pies, and disparage
 Their best and dearest friend, plum-porridge:
 Fat pig and goose itself oppose,
 And blaspheme custard thro' the nose. 230

Th' apostles of this fierce religion,
 Like MAHOMET'S,^w were ass and widgeon;
 To whom our Knight, by fast instinct
 Of wit and temper was so linkt,
 As if hypocrisy and nonsense 235
 Had got th' advowson of his conscience.

Thus was he gifted and accouter'd;
 We mean on th' inside, not the outward;
 That next of all we shall discuss:
 Then listen, Sirs, it follows thus: 240

His tawny beard was th' equal grace
 Both of his wisdom and his face;
 In cut and dye so like a tile,
 A sudden view it would beguile:
 The upper part thereof was whey; 245
 The nether, orange mix'd with grey.

This hairy meteor did denounce
 The fall of scepters and of crowns;

*With grisly type did represent
 Declining age of government;* 250

PART I. CANTO I.

9

And tell with hieroglyphick spade,
 Its own grave and the state's were made.
 Like SAMPSON's heart-breakers, it grew
 In time to make a nation rue ;
 Tho' it contributed its own fall, 255
 To wait upon the publick downfall,
 It was a monastick, and did grow
 In holy orders by strict vow ;
 Of rule as sullen and severe
 As that of rigid Cordeliere. 260
 'Twas bound to suffer persecution
 And martyrdom with resolution ;
 T' oppose itself against the hate
 And vengeance of th' incensed state ;
 In whose defiance it was worn, 265
 Still ready to be pull'd and torn ;
 With red-hot irons to be tortur'd ;
 Revil'd, and spit upon, and martyr'd.
 Maugre all which, 'twas to stand fast
 As long as monarchy shou'd last ; 270
 But when the state should hap to reel,
 'Twas to submit to fatal steel,
 And fall, as it was consecrate,
 A sacrifice to fall of state ;
 Whose thread of life the fatal sisters 275
 Did twist together with its whiskers,
 And twine so close, that time should never,
 In life or death, their fortunes sever ;
 But with his rusty sickle mow
 Both down together at a blow. 280
 So learned TALIAQOTUS y from
 The brawny part of porter's bum
 Cut supplemental noses, which
 Wou'd last as long as parent breech ;

But when the date of Nock was out, 285
 Off drop'd the sympathetic snout.

His back, or rather burthen, show'd,
 As if it stoop'd with its own load :
 For as *ÆNEAS* ² bore his sire
 Upon his shoulders thro' the fire, 290

Our Knight did bear no less a pack
 Of his own buttocks on his back ;
 Which now had almost got the upper-
 Hand of his head, for want of crupper.
 To poise this equally, he bore 295

A paunch of the same bulk before ;
 Which still he had a special care
 To keep well-cramm'd with thrifty fare ;
 As white-pot, butter-milk, and curds,
 Such as a country-house affords ; 300

With other vittle, which anon
 We farther shall dilate upon,
 When of his hose we come to treat,
 The cupboard where he kept his meat.

His doublet was of sturdy buff, 305
 And tho' not sword, yet cudgel-proof ;
 Whereby 'twas fitter for his use,
 Who fear'd no blows, but such as bruise.

His breeches were of rugged woollen,
 And had been at the siege of Bullen ; 310
 To old King *HARRY* so well known,
 Some writers held they were his own.

Thro' they were lin'd with many a piece
 Of ammunition bread and cheese,
 And fat black-puddings, proper food 315
 For warriors that delight in blood.

For, as we said, he always chose
 To carry vittle in his hose,

PART I. CANTO I.

11

That often tempted rats and mice
The ammunition to surprise : 320
And when he put a hand but in
The one or t' other magazine,
They stoutly in defence on't stood,
And from the wounded foe drew blood ;
And 'till th' were storm'd and beaten out, 325
Ne'er left the fortify'd redoubt.
And tho' Knights Errant, as some think,
Of old did neither eat nor drink,
Because, when thorough desarts vast,
And regions desolate, they past, 330
Where belly-timber-above ground,
Or under, was not to be found,
Unless they gras'd, there's not one word
Of their provision on record ;
Which made some confidently write, 335
They had no stomachs, but to fight.
'Tis false : for a *ARTHUR* wore in hall
Round table like a farthingal,
On which with shirt pull'd out behind,
And eke before, his good Knights din'd. 340
Though 'twas no table, some suppose,
But a huge pair of round trunk hose ;
In which he carry'd as much meat
As he and all the Knights cou'd eat,
When, laying by their swords and truncheons, 345
They took their breakfasts, or their nunncheons.
But let that pass at present, lest
We should forget where we digrest,
As learned authors use, to whom
We leave it, and to th' purpose come. 350
His puissant sword unto his side,
Near his undaunted heart, was ty'd ;

With basket-hilt, that wou'd hold broth,
 And serve for fight and dinner both.
 In it he melted lead for bullets, 353
 To shoot at foes, and sometimes pullets,
 To whom he bore so fell a grutch,
 He ne'er gave quarter t' any such.
 The trenchant blade, ^b Toledo trusty,
 For want of fighting, was grown rusty, 360
 And ate unto itself, for lack
 Of somebody to hew and hack.
 The peaceful scabbard where it dwelt
 The rancour of its edge had felt;
 For of the lower end two handful 365
 It had devour'd, 'twas so manful;
 And so much scorn'd to lurk in case,
 As if it durst not shew its face.
 In many desperate attempts,
 Of warrants, exigents, contempts, 370
 It had appear'd with courage bolder
 Than Serjeant Bum invading shoulder.
 Oft had it ta'en possession;
 And pris'ners too, or made them run.

This sword a dagger had t' his page, 375
 That was but little for his age;
 And therefore waited on him so,
 As dwarfs upon Knights-Errant do.
 It was a servicable dudgeon,
 Either for fighting or for drudging. 380
 When it had stabb'd, or broke a head,
 It would scrape trenchers, or clip bread;
 Toast cheese or bacon; tho' it were
 To bait a mouse-trap, 'twould not care.
 'Twould make clean shoes; and in the earth
 Set locks and onions, and so forth.

It had been 'prentice to a brewer,
Where this and more it did endure ;
But left the trade, c as many more
Have lately done on the same score. 390

In th' holsters, at his saddle-bow,
Two aged pistols he did stow,
Among the surplus of such meat
As in his hose he cou'd not get.
These wou'd inveigle rats with th' scent, 395
To forage when the cocks were bent ;
And sometimes catch 'em with a snap
As cleverly as th' ablest trap.
They were 'upon hard duty still,
And ev'ry night stood centinel, 400
To guard the magazine i' th' hose
From two-legg'd and from four-legg'd foes.

Thus clad and fortify'd, Sir Knight
From peaceful home set forth to fight.
But first with nimble, active force 405
He got on th' outside of his horse ;
For having but one stirrup ty'd
T' his saddle, on the further side,
It was so short, h' had much add
To reach it with his desp'rate toe : 410
But, after many strains and heaves,
He got up to the saddle-eaves,
From whence he vaulted into th' seat,
With so much vigour, strength and heat,
That he had almost tumbled over 415
With his own weight, but did recover,
By laying hold on tail and main,
Which oft he us'd instead of rein.

But now we talk of mounting steed,
Before we further do proceed, 420

It doth behoves us to say something
Of that which bore our valiant bannikin.
The beast was sturdy, large, and tall,
With mouth of meal, and eyes of wall.
I wou'd say eye ; for h' had but one,
As most agree ; tho' some say none.
He was well stay'd ; and in his gait
Preserv'd a grave, majestick state.
At spur or switch no more he skipt,
Or mended pace, than Spaniard whipt ;
And yet so fiery, he wou'd bound
As if he griev'd to touch the ground :
That CÆSAR's horsed, who, as fame goes
Had corns upon his feet and toes,
Was not by half so tender hoofst,
Nor trod upon the ground so soft.
And as that beast would kneel and stoop
(Some write) to take his rider up,
So HUDIBRAS his ('tis well known)
Wou'd often do to set him down.
We shall not need to say what lack
Of leather was upon his back ;
For that was hidden under pad,
And breech of Knight, gall'd full as bad.
His strutting ribs on both sides show'd
Like furrows he himself had plow'd ;
For underneath the skirt of pannel,
'Twixt ev'ry two there was a channel.
His dragging tail hung in the dirt,
Which on his rider he wou'd flurt,
Still as his tender side he prick'd,
With arm'd heel, or with unarm'd kick'd :
For HUDIBRAS wore but one spur ;
As wisely knowing, cou'd he stir

PART I. CANTO I.

15

To active trot one side of's horse, 455
The other wou'd not hang an arse.

A squire he had, whose name was RALPH,
That in th' adventure went his half :
Though writers, for more stately tone,
Do call him RALPHO ; 'tis all one ; 460

And when we can with metre safe,
We'll call him so ; if not, plain RALPH :
(For rhyme the rudder is of verses,
With which like ships they steer their courses.)
An equal stock of wit and valour 465

He had laid in ; by birth a taylor.
The mighty Tyrian Queen, e that gain'd
With subtle shreds a tract of land,
Did leave it with a castle fair
To his great ancestor, her heir. 470

From him descended cross-legg'd Knights,
Fam'd for their faith, and warlike fights
Against the bloody cannibal,
Whom they destroy'd both great and small.
This sturdy Squire, he had, as well 475

As the f bold Trojan Knight, seen Hell ;
Not with a counterfeited pass
Of golden bough, but true gold-lace.
His knowledge was not far behind
The Knight's, but of another kind, 480

And he another way came by 't :
Some call it GIFTS, and some NEW-LIGHT ;
A liberal art, that costs no pains
Of study, industry, or brains.
His wit was sent him for a token, 485

But in the carriage crack'd and broken.
Like commendation nine-pence crook'd,
With — To and from my love — it look'd.

He ne'er consider'd it, as loth
 To look a gift-horse in the mouth ; 490
 And very wisely wou'd lay forth
 No more upon it than 'twas worth.
 But as he got it freely, so
 He spent it frank and freely too.
 For Saints themselves will sometimes be 495
 Of gifts, that cost them nothing, free.
 By means of this, with hem and cough,
 Prolongers to eplighen'd stuff,
 He cou'd deep mysteries unriddle
 As easily as thread a needle. 500
 For as of vagabonds we say,
 That they are ne'er beside their way ;
 Whate'er men speak by this New Light,
 Still they are sure to be i' th' right.
 'Tis a dark-lanthorn of the Spirit, 505
 Which none see by but those that bear it :
 A light that falls down from on high,
 For spiritual trades to cozen by :
 An Ignis Fatuus, that bewitches
 And leads men into pools and ditches, 510
 To make them dip themselves, and sound
 For Christendom in dirty pond ;
 To dive like wild-fowl for salvation,
 And fish to catch regeneration.
 This light inspires and plays upon 515
 The nose of Saint like bag-pipe drone,
 And speaks through hollow empty soul,
 As through a trunk, or whisp'ring hole,
 Such language as no mortal ear
 But spirit'al eaves-droppers can hear : 520
*So PHOEBUS, or some friendly muse,
 Into small poets song infuse,*

PART I. CANTO I.

Which they at second-hand rehearse,
 Thro' reed or bag-pipe, verse for verse.
 Thus RALPH became infallible
 As three or four-legg'd oracle,
 The ancient cup, or modern chair;
 Spoke truth point-blank, tho' unaware.
 For MYSTICK LEARNING, wond'rous able
 In a magick Talisman and Cabal,
 Whose primitive tradition reaches
 As far as ADAM's first green breeches : 53
 Deep-sighted in intelligences,
 Ideas, atoms, influences;
 And much of Terra Incognita,
 Th' intelligible world, cou'd say : 535
 A deep occult PHILOSOPHER,
 As learn'd as the wild Irish are,
 Or Sir AGRIPPA !; for profound
 And solid lying much renown'd.
 He ANTHROPOSOPIUS, and FLOU, 540
 And JACOB BEHMEN understood :
 Knew many an amulet and charm,
 That wou'd do neither good nor harm :
 In ROSY-CRUCIAN lore as learned,
 As he that Vere adeptus earned. 545
 He understood the speech of birds
 As well as they themselves do words :
 Cou'd tell what subtlest parrots mean,
 That speak, and think contrary clean :
 What Member 'tis of whom they talk, 550
 When they cry, Rope, and walk, knave, walk.
 He'd extract numbers out of matter,
 And keep them in a glass, like water ;
 'savour' reign pow'r to make men wise ;
 drop'd in blew thick-sighted eyes, 555

'They'd make them see in darkest night
 Like owls, tho' purblind in the light.
 By help of these (as he profess'd)
 He had First Matter seen undress'd : 560
 He took her naked all alone,
 Before one rag of form was on.
 The Chaos too he had descry'd,
 And seen quite thro', or else he ly'd :
 Not that of paste-board which men shew 565
 For groats, at fair of Barthol'mew ;
 But its great grandsire, first o' the name,
 Whence that and REFORMATION came ;
 Both cousin-germans, and right able
 'T' inveigle and draw in the rabble. 570
 But Reformation was, some say,
 O' th' younger house to Puppet-play.
 He cou'd foretel what's ever was
 By consequence to come to pass ;
 As death of great men, alterations, 575
 Diseases, battles, inundations.
 All this, without th' eclipse o' th' sun,
 Or dreadful comet, he hath done,
 By inward light ; a way as good,
 And easy to be understood ; 580
 But with more lucky hit than those
 That use to make the stars depose,
 Like Knights o' th' post, and falsely charge
 Upon themselves what others forge :
 As if they were consenting to 585
 All mischiefs in the world men do :
 Or, like the Devil, did tempt and sway 'em
 To rogueries, and then betray 'em.
They'll search a planet's house, to know
Who broke and robb'd a house below : 590

Examine VENUS, and the MOON,
 Who stole a thimble or a spoon;
 And tho' they nothing will confess,
 Yet by their very looks can guess,
 And tell what guilty aspect bodes, 595
 Who stole, and who receiv'd the goods.
 They'll question MARS, and, by his look,
 Detect who 'twas that nimm'd a cloke:
 Make MERCURY confess, and 'peach
 Those thieves which he himself did teach. 600
 They'll find, i' th' physiognomies
 O' th' planets, all men's destinies;
 Like him that took the doctor's bill,
 And swallow'd it instead o' th' pill:
 Cast the nativity o' th' question, 605
 And from positions to be guess'd on,
 As sure as if they knew the moment
 Of natives birth, tell what will come on't.
 They'll feel the pulses of the stars,
 To find out agues, coughs, catarrhs; 610
 And tell what crisis does divine.
 The rot in shæep, or mange in swine:
 In men, what gives or cures the itch;
 What makes them cuckolds, poor or rich;
 What gains or loses, hangs or saves; 615
 What makes men great, what fools or knaves,
 But not what wise; for only of those
 The stars (they say) cannot dispose.
 No more than can the Astrologians.
 There they say right, and like true Trojans. 620
 This RALPHO knew, and therefore took
 The other course, of which we spoke.
 Thus was the accomplish'd Squire end'd
 With gifts and knowledge, per'lous shrew'd.

Never did trusty Squire with Knight, 625
 Or Knight with Squire, e'er jump more right.
 Their arms and equipage did fit,
 As well as virtues, parts, and wit.
 Their valours too were of a rate ;
 And out they sally'd at the gate. 630
 Few miles on horseback had they jogged,
 But Fortune unto them turn'd dogged ;
 For they a sad adventure met,
 Of which anon we mean to treat ;
 But ere we venture to unfold 635
 Atchievements so resolv'd and bold,
 We shou'd as learned poets use,
 Invoke th' assistance of some muse ;
 However, criticks count it sillier
 Than jugglers talking to familiar. 640
 We think 'tis no great matter which ;
 They're all alike ; yet we shall pitch
 On one that fits our purpose most,
 Whom therefore thus do we accost :
 Thou that with ale, or viler liquors, 645
 Did'st inspire WITHERS, PRYN^e, and VICKARS,
 And force them, tho' it was in spite
 Of nature and their stars, to write ;
 Who, as we find in sullen writs,
 And cross-grain'd works of modern wits, 650
 With vanity, opinion, want,
 The wonder of the ignorant,
 The praises of the author, penn'd
 B' himself, or wit-insuring friend ;
 The itch of picture in the front, 655
 With bays and wicked rhyme upon't ;
All that is left o' th' forked hill,
To make men scribble without skill ;

PART I. CANTO I.

21

Canst make a poet spite of fate,
 And teach all people to translate;
 Tho' out of languages in which
 They understand no part of speech;
 Assist me but this once, I 'mptore,
 And I shall trouble thee no more.

In western blime there is a town, 665

To those that dwell therein well known;

Therefore there needs no more be said here,

We unto them refer our reader;

For brevity is very good,

When w' are, or are not, understood. 670

To this town people did repair,

On days of market, or of fair,

And, to crack'd fiddle, and hoarse labor,

In merriment did drudge and labor.

But now a sport more formidable 675

Had rak'd together village rabble:

'Twas an old way of recreating,

Which learned butchers call bear-baiting:

A bold advent'rous exercise,

With ancient heroes in high prize: 680

For authors do affirm it came

From Isthmian or Nemean game:

Others derive it from the bear

That's fix'd in northern hemisphere,

And round about the pole does make 685

A circle like a bear at stake,

That at the chain's end wheels about,

And overturns the rabble-rout.

For after solemn proclamation,

In the bear's name, (as is the fashion,

According to the law of arms,

To keep men from inglorious harms.)

That none presume to come so near
 As forty foot of stake of bear,
 If any yet be so fool-hardy, 693
 T' expose themselves to vain jeopardy.
 If they come wounded off, and lame,
 No honour's got by such a maim;
 Altho' the bear gain much, b'ing bound
 In honour to make good his ground, 700
 When he's engag'd, and takes no notice,
 If any press upon him, who 'tis;
 But let's them know, at their own cost,
 That he intends to keep his post.
 This to prevent, and other harms, 703
 Which always wait on feats of arms,
 (For in the hurry of a fray
 'Tis hard to keep out of harm's way,)
 Thither the Knight his course did steer,
 To keep the peace 'twixt dog and bear; 710
 As he believ'd he was bound to do
 In conscience, and commission too;
 And therefore thus bespoke the Squire .
 We that *P* are wisely mounted higher
 Than constables in curule wit, 715
 When on tribunal bench we sit,
 Like speculators shou'd foresee,
 From Pharos of authority,
 Portended mischiefs farther then
 Low Proletarian tything-men : 720
 And therefore being inform'd by bruit,
 That dog and bear are to dispute;
 For so of late men fighting name,
 Because they often prove the same;
 (For where the first does hap to be, 725
 The last does coincidere ;)

PART I. CANTO I.

23

Quantum in nobis, have thought good,
 To save th' expence of Christian blood,
 And try if we, by mediation
 Of treaty and accommodation, 730
 Can end the quarrel, and compose
 The bloody duel without blows.
 Are not our liberties, our lives,
 The laws, religion, and our wives,
 Enough at once to lie at stake 735
 For Cov'nant and the Cause's sake?
 But in that quarrel dogs and bears,
 As well as we must venture theirs?
 This feud, by Jesuits invented,
 By evil counsel is fomented : 740
 There is a *MACHIAVILIAN* plot, -
 (Tho' ev'ry *Nare olfact* is not,)
 A deep design in't, to divide
 The well-affected that confide,
 By setting brother against brother, 745
 To claw and curry one another.
 Have we not enemies *plus satis*,
 That *Cane & Angue pejus* hate us?
 And shall we turn our fangs and claws
 Upon our own selves, without cause? 750
 That some occult design doth lie
 In bloody & cynarctomachy,
 Is plain enough to him that knows
 How Saints lead brothers by the nose.
 I wish myself a pseudo-prophet, 755
 But sure some mischief will come of it;
 Unless by providential wit,
 Or force, we raveruncate it.
 For what design, what interest,
 Can beast have to encounter beast? 760

They fight for no espoused cause,
 Frail privileges, fundamental laws,
 Not for a thorough reformation,
 Nor covenant, nor protestation,
 Nor liberty of consciences, 765
 Nor Lords and Commons ordinances;
 Nor for the church, nor for church-lands,
 To get them in their own no hands;
 Nor evil counsellors to bring
 To justice that seduce the King; 770
 Nor for the worship of us men,
 Though we have done as much for them.
 Th' Ægyptians worshipp'd dogs, and for
 Their faith made internecine war:
 Others ador'd a rat, and some 775
 For that church suffer'd martyrdom.
 The Indians fought for the truth
 Of th' elephant and monkey's tooth,
 And many, to defend that faith,
 Fought it out *mordicus* to death. 780
 But no beast ever was so slight,
 For man, as for his God, to fight.
 They have more wit, alas! and know
 Themselves and us better than so.
 But we, who only do infuse 785
 The rage in them like *Boute-feus*;
 'Tis our example that instils
 In them th' infection of our ill.
 For, as some late philosophers
 Have well observ'd, beasts, that converse 790
 With man, take after him, as hogs.
 Get pigs all the year, and bitches dogs.
 Just so, by our example, cattle
 Learn to give one another battle.

PART I. CANTO I.

25

We read, in NERO's time, the heathen, 795

When they destroy'd the Christian brethren,

Did sew them in the skins of bears,

And then set dogs about their ears :

From thence, no doubt, th' invention came

Of this lewd antichristian game. 800

To this, quoth RALPHO, Verily

The point seems very plain to me.

It is an antichristian game,

Unlawful both in thing and name.

First, for the name : the word, bear-baiting 805

Is carnal, and of man's creating :

For certainly there's no such word

In all the scripture on record ;

Therefore unlawful, and a sin ;

And so is (secondly) the thing. 810

A vile assembly 'tis, that can

No more be prov'd by scripture than

Provincial, classic, national ;

Mere human-creature cobwebs all,

Thirdly, it is idolatrous ; 815

For when men run a whoring thus

With their inventions, whatsoe'er

The thing be, whether dog, or bear,

It is idolatrous and pagan,

No less than worshipping of DAGON. 820

Quoth HUDIBRAS, I smell a rat :

RALPHO, thou dost prevaricate :

For though the thesis which thou lay'st

Be true *ad amussim*, as thou say'st ;

(For that bear-baiting should appear 825

Jure divino lawfuller

Than synods are, thou dost deny,

Totidem verbis ; so do I.)

Yet there's a fallacy in this; 830
 For if by sly HOMÆOSIS,
Tussis pro crepitu, an art
 Under a cough to slur a f—t,
 'Thou wou'dst sophistically imply,
 Both are unlawful, I deny.

And I (quoth RALPHO) do not doubt 835
 But bear-baiting may be made out,
 In gospel-times, as lawful as is
 Provincial or parochial classis;
 And that both are so near of kin,
 And like in all, as well as sin, 840
 That put them in a bag, and shake 'em,
 Yourself o' th' sudden would mistake 'em,
 And not know which is which, unless
 You measure by their wickedness:
 For 'tis not hard t' imagine whether 845
 O' th' two is worst; tho' I name neither.

Quoth HUDIBRAS, Thou offer'st much,
 But art not able to keep touch.
Mira de lente, as 'tis i' th' adage,
Id est, to make a leek a cabbage; 850
 Thou'lt be at best but such a bull,
 Or shear-swine, all cry, and no wool;
 For what can synods have at all
 With bear that's analogical?
 Or what relation has debating 855
 Of church-affairs with bear-baiting?
 A just comparison still is
 Of things *ejusdem generis*;
 And then what genus rightly doth
 Include and comprehend them both? 860
 If animal both of us may
 As justly pass for bears as they;

PART I. CANTO I.

27

For we are animals no less,
 Altho' of different specieses.
 But, RALPHO, this is not fit place 865
 Nor time to argue out the case :
 For now the field is not far off,
 Where we must give the world a proof
 Of deeds, not words, and such as suit
 Another manner of dispute ; 870
 A controversy that affords
 Actions for arguments, not words ;
 Which we must manage at a rate
 Of prowess and conduct adequate
 To what our place and fame doth promise, 875
 And all the godly expect from us,
 Nor shall they be deceiv'd, unless
 We're slurr'd and outed by success ;
 Success, the mark no mortal wit,
 Or surest hand can always hit : 880
 For whatsoe'er we perpetrate,
 We do but row, we're steer'd by Fate,
 Which in success oft disinherits,
 For spurious causes, noblest merits.
 Great actions are not always true sons 885
 Of great and mighty resolutions ;
 Nor do th' boldest attempts bring forth
 Events still equal to their worth ;
 But sometimes fail, and, in their stead,
 Fortune and cowardice succeed. 890
 Yet we have no great cause to doubt ;
 Our actions still have borne us out ;
 Which tho', they're known to be so ample,
 We need not copy from example.
 We're not *the only* persons durst 895
Attempt this province, nor the first.

In northern clime a val'rous Knight
 Did whilom kill his bear in fight,
 And wound a fiddler ; we have both
 Of these the objects of our wroth, 900
 And equal fame and glory from
 Th' attempt of victory to come.
 'Tis sung, there is a valiant ^o Mamaluke
 In foreign land, yclep'd—
 To whom we have been oft compar'd 905
 For person, parts, address, and beard ;
 Both equally reputed stout,
 And in the same cause both have fought :
 He oft in such attempts as these
 Came off with glory and success ; 910
 Nor will we fail in th' execution,
 For want of equal resolution.
 Honour is like a ^w widow, won
 With brisk attempt and putting on ;
 With ent'ring manfully, and urging ; 915
 Not slow approaches, like a virgin.
 'Tis said, as yerst the Phrygian Knight,
 So ours with rusty steel did smite
 His Trojan horse, and just as much
 He mended pace upon the touch ; 920
 But from his empty stomach groan'd
 Just as that hollow beast did sound,
 And angry answer'd from behind,
 With brandish'd tail and blast of wind.
 So have I seen, with armed heel, 925
 A wight bestride a Common-weal ;
 While still the more he kick'd and spurr'd,
 The less the sullen jade has stirr'd.





THE ARGUMENT.

The catalogue and character
 Of th' enemies best men of war ;
 Whom, in bold harangue, the Knight
 Defies, and challenges to fight.
 H' encounters Talgol, routs the Bear,
 And takes the Fiddler prisoner,
 Conveys him to enchanted castle ;
 There shuts him fast in wooden bastille.

THERE was an ancient sage philosopher,
 That had read ALEXANDER ROSS over,
 And swore the world, as he cou'd prove,
 Was made of fighting and of love :
 Just so romances are ; for what else 5
 Is in them all, but love and battels ?
 O' th' first of these we've no great matter
 To treat of, but a world o' th' latter ;
 In which to do the injur'd right
 We mean, in what concerns just fight. 10
 Certes our authors are to blame,
 For to make some well-sounding name
 A pattern fit for modern Knights
 To copy out in frays and fights ;
 Like those that a whole street do raze 15
 To build a palace in the place.
 They never care how many others
 They kill, without regard of mothers,
 Or wives, or children, so they can
 Make up some fierce, dead-doing man, 20
 Compos'd of many ingredient valors,
 Just like the manhood of nine taylors.

So a Wild Tartar, when he spies
 A man that's handsome, valiant, wise,
 If he can kill him, thinks t' inherit 25
 His wit, his beauty, and his spirit ;
 As if just so much he enjoy'd
 As in another is destroy'd.
 For when a giant's slain in fight,
 And mow'd o'erthwart, or cleft down right, 30
 It is a heavy case, no doubt,
 A man should have his brains beat out
 Because he's tall, and has large bones ;
 As men kill beavers for their stones.
 But as for our part, we shall tell 35
 The naked truth of what befel ;
 And as an equal friend to both
 The Knight and Bear, but more to troth,
 With neither faction shall take part,
 But give to each his due desert ; 40
 And never coin a formal lie on't,
 To make the Knight o'ercome the giant.
 This b'ing profest, we've hopes enough,
 And now go on where we left off.
 They rode ; but authors having not 45
 Determin'd whether pace or trot,
 (That is to say, whether x tollutation,
 As they do term't, or succussion,)
 We leave it, and go on, as now
 Suppose they did, no matter how ; 50
 Yet some from subtle hints have got
 Mysterious light, it was a trot :
 But let that pass : they now begun
 To spur their living engines on.
 For as whipp'd tops, and bandy'd balls, 55
 The learned hold, are animal ;

So horses they affirm to be
 Mere engines made by geometry ;
 And were invented first from engines,
 As y Indian Britons were from Penguins. 60
 So let them be ; and, as I was saying,
 They their live engines ply'd, not staying
 Until they reach'd the fatal champain,
 Which th' enemy did then encamp on ;
 The z dire Pharsalian plain, where battle 65
 Was to be wag'd 'twixt puissant cattle
 And fierce auxiliary men,
 That came to aid their brethren,
 Who now began to take the field,
 As Knight from ridge of steed beheld. 70
 For as our modern wits behold,
 Mounted a pick-back on the old,
 Much further off, much further he,
 Rais'd on his aged beast cou'd see ;
 Yet not sufficient to descry 75
 All postures of the enemy ;
 Wherefore he bids the Squire ride forthen,
 T' observe their numbers, and their order ;
 That when their motions he had known,
 He might know how to fit his own. 80
 Meanwhile he stopp'd his willing steed,
 To fit himself for martial deed.
 Both kinds of metal he prepar'd,
 Either to give blows, or to wardt
 Courage and steel, both of great force, 85
 Prepar'd for better, or for worse.
 His death-charg'd pistols he did fit well,
 Drawn out from life-preserving vittle.
 These being prim'd, with force he labour'd
 To free's sword from retentive scabbard ; 90

And, after many a painful pluck,
 From rusty durance he bail'd tuck.
 Then shook himself, to see that prowess
 In scabbard of his arms sat loose ;
 And, rais'd upon his desp'rate foot, 95
 On stirrup-side he gaz'd about,
 Portending blood, like blazing star,
 The beacon of approaching war.
 RALPHO rode on with no less speed
 Than Hugo in the forest did ; 100
 But far more in returning made ;
 For now the foe he had survey'd,
 Rang'd as to him they did appear,
 With van, main battle, wings, and rear.
 I' the head of all this warlike rabble, 105
 CROWDERO march'd, expert and able.
 Instead of trumpet and of drum,
 That makes the warrior's stomach come,
 Was a noise whets valour sharp, like beer
 By thunder turn'd to vinegar, 110
 (For if a trumpet sound, or drum beat,
 Who has not a month's mind to combat ?)
 A squeaking engine he apply'd
 Unto his neck, on north-east side,
 Just where the hangman does dispose, 115
 To special friends, the knot of noose :
 For 'tis great grace, when statesmen straight
 Dispatch a friend, let others wait.
 His warped ear hung o'er the strings,
 Which was but souse to chitterlings : 120
 For guts, some write, e'er they are sodden,
 Are fit for music, or for pudden ;
 From whence men borrow ev'ry kind
 Of minstrel by string or wind.

His grisly beard was long and thick, 125
 With which he strung his fiddle-stick;
 For he to horse-tail ween'd to owe;
 For what on his own chin did grow
 Chiron, a the four-legg'd bard, had both
 A beard and tail of his own growth; 130
 And yet by authors 'tis averr'd,
 He made use only of his beard.

In ^b Staffordshire, where virtuous worth
 Does raise the minstrelsy, not birth;
 Where bulls do chuse the boldest king, 135
 And ruler, o'er the men of string;
 (As once in Persia, 'tis said,
 Kings were proclaim'd by a horse that neigh'd;)—
 He bravely venturing at a brown,
 By chance of war was beaten down, 140
 And wounded sore. His leg then broke,
 Had got a deputy of oak;
 For when a shin in fight is cropp'd,
 The knee with one of timber's propp'd,
 Esteem'd more honourable than the other, 145
 And takes place, though the younger brother.

Next march'd brave Orsini, famous for
 Wise conduct, and success in war;
 A skilful leader, stout, severe,
 Now marshal to the champion bear, 150
 With truncheon, tipp'd with lion head,
 The warrior to the lists he led;
 With solemn march and stately pace,
 But far more grave and solemn face;
 Grave as the Emperor of Pegu, 155
 Or Spanish potentate Don Diego.
 This leader was of knowledge great,
 Either for charge or for retreat.

He knew when to fall on pell-mell ;
 To fall back and retreat as well, 160
 So lawyers, lest the bear defendant,
 And plaintiff dog, should make an end on't,
 Do stave and tail with writs of error,
 Reverse of judgment, and demurrer,
 To let them breathe a while, and then 165
 Cry whoop, and set them on agen.
 As ROMULUS a wolf did rear,
 So he was dry-nurs'd by a bear,
 That fed him with the purchas'd prey
 Of many a fierce and bloody fray ; 170
 Bred up, where discipline most rare is,
 In military Garden Paris.
 For soldiers heretofore did grow
 In gardens, just as weeds do now,
 Until some splay-foot politicians 175
 T' APOLLO offer'd up petitions
 For licensing a new invention
 They'd found out of an antique engine,
 To root out all the weeds that grow
 In public gardens at a blow, 180
 And leave th' herbs standing. Quoth Sir Sun,
 My friends, that is not to be done.
 Not done ! quoth Statesmen ; yes, an't please ye,
 When it's once known, you'll say 'tis easy.
 Why then let's know it, quoth Apollo. 185
 We'll beat a drum, and they'll all follow.
 A drum ! (quoth PNEUMUS ;) troth, that's true ;
 A pretty invention, quaint and new.
 But though of voice and instrument
 We are the undoubted president, 190
 We such loud music don't profess :
The Devil's master of that office,

PART I. CANTO II.

35

Where it must pass, if't be a drum ;
 He'll sign it with Cler. Parl. Dom. Com.
 To him apply yourselves, and he 195
 Will soon dispatch you for his fee.
 They did so ; but it prov'd so ill,
 Th' had better let 'em grow there still.
 But to resume what we discoursing
 Were on before, that is, stout OMSIN : 200
 That which so oft, by sundry writers,
 Has been applied t' almost all fighters,
 More justly may b' ascrib'd to this
 Than any other warrior, (viz.)
 None ever acted both parts bolder, 205
 Both of a chieftain and a soldier.
 He was of great descent and high
 For splendour and antiquity ;
 And from celestial origine
 Deriv'd himself in a right line. 210
 Not as the ancient heroes did,
 Who, that their base-births might be hid,
 (Knowing they were of doubtful gender,
 And that they came in at a windore,) 215
 Made Jupiter himself, and others
 O' th' gods, gallants to their own mothers,
 To get on them a race of champions,
 (Of which old Homer first made Lampeons.)
 ARCTOPHYLAX, in northern sphere,
 Was his undoubted ancestor : 220
 From him his great forefathers came,
 And in all ages bore his name.
 Learned he was in med'c'nal lore ;
 For by his side a pouch he wore,
 Replete with strange Hermetic powder, 225
 That wounds nine miles point-blank wou'd solder ;

By skilful chemist, with great cost,
 Extracted from a rotten post ;
 But of a heav'nlier influence
 Than that which mountebanks dispense ; 230
 Tho' by Promethean fire made,
 As they do quack that drive that trade.
 For as when slovens do amiss
 At others doors, by stool or piss,
 The learned write; a red-hot spit 235
 B'ing prudently apply'd to it,
 Will convey mischief from the dung
 Unto the part that did the wrong,
 So this did healing ; and as sure
 As that did mischief, this would cure. 240
 Thus virtuous ORSKY was endu'd
 With learning, conduct, fortitude,
 Incomparable : and as the prince
 Of poets, HOMER, sung long since,
 A skilful leech is better far 245
 Than half an hundred men of war,
 So he appear'd ; and by his skill,
 No less than dint of sword, cou'd kill.
 The gallant BRUIN march'd next him,
 With visage formidably grim, 250
 And rugged as a Sarcen,
 Or Turk of Mahomet's own kin ;
 Clad in a mantle *della guerre*
 Of tough impenetrable fur ;
 And in his nose, like Indian King, 255
 He wore, for ornament, a ring ;
 About his neck a threefold gorget.
 As rough as trebled leathers target ;
 Armed, as heralds cant, and langued ;
 Or, as the vulger say, sharp-fanged. 260

PART I. CANTO II.

37

For as the teeth in beasts of prey
 Are swords, with which they fight in fray;
 So swords, in men of war, are teeth,
 Which they do eat their vittles with.
 He was by birth, some authors write, 265
 A Russian; some, a Muscovite;
 And 'mong the Cossacks had been bred;
 Of whom we in diurnals read,
 That serve to fill up pages here,
 As with their bodies ditches there. 270
 SCRIMANSKY was his cousin-german,
 With whom he serv'd, and fed on vermin;
 And when these fail'd, he'd suck his claws,
 And quarter himself upon his paws.
 And tho' his countrymen, the Huns, 275
 Did stew their meat between their bums
 And th' horses backs o'er which they straddle,
 And ev'ry man eat up his saddle;
 He was not half so nice as they,
 But eat it raw when 't came in's way. 280
 He had trac'd countries far and near,
 More than LE BLANC, the traveller;
 Who writes, he spaus'd in India,
 Of noble house, a lady gay,
 And got on her a race of worthies, 285
 As stout as any upon earth is.
 Full many a fight for him between
 TALGOL and ORSEN oft had been;
 Each striving to deserve the crown
 Of a sav'd citizen; the one 290
 To guard his bear; the other fought
 To aid his dog; both made more stout
 By sev'ral spurs of neighbourhood.
 Church-fellow-membership, and blood;

But TALGOL, mortal foe to cows, 295
 Never got aught of him but blows;
 Blows, hard and heavy, such as he
 Had lent, repaid with usury.

Yet TALGOL was of courage stout,
 And vanquish'd oft'ner than he fought : 300
 Inur'd to labour, sweat and toil,
 And like a champion shone with oil.
 Right many a widow his keen blade,
 And many fatherless had made.

He many a boar and huge dun-cow 305
 Did, like another GUY, o'erthrow ;
 But GUY with him in fight compar'd,
 Had like the boar or dun-cow far'd.

With greater troops of sheep-h' had fought
 Than AJAX or bold DON QUIXOTE : 310

And many a serpent of fell kind,
 With wings before and stings behind,
 Subdu'd : as poets say, long ago
 Bold Sir GEORGE, St. GEORGE did the dragon.
 Nor engine, nor device polemic, 315

Disease, nor doctor epidemic,
 Tho' stor'd with deleterious medicines,
 (Which whosoever took is dead since,)
 E'er sent so vast a colony

To both the underworlds-as he : 320
 For he was of that noble trade

That demi-gods and heroes made,
 Slaughter and knocking on the head ;
 The trade to which they all were bred ;
 And is, like others, glorious when 325

'Tis great and large, but base if mean.
 The former rides in triumph for it ;
 The latter in a two-wheel'd chariot.

PART I. CANTO II.

39

For daring to profane a thing
So sacred with vile bungling. 330

Next these the brave MAGNANO came;
MAGNANO, great in martial fame.
Yet when with ORSIN he wag'd fight,
'Tis sung, he got but little by't.
Yet he was fierce as forest boar, 335
Whose spoils upon his back he wore,
As thick as AJAX' seven-fold shield,
Which o'er his brazen arms he held:
But brass was feeble to resist
The fury of his armed fist: 340
Nor cou'd the hardest ir'n hold out
Against his blows, but they wou'd through't.

In MAGIC he was deeply read
As he that made the bruzen head;
Profoundly skill'd in the black art; 345
As ENGLISH MERLIN for his heart;
But far more skilful in the spheres
Than he was at the sieve and shears.
He cou'd transform himself in colour
As like the devil as a collier; 350
As like as hypocrites in show
Are to true saints, or crow to crow.

Of WARLIKE ENGINES he was author,
Devis'd for quick dispatch of slaughter:
The cannon, blunderbuss, and saker, 355
He was th' inventor of, and maker:
The trumpet, and the kettle-drum,
Did both from his invention come.
He was the first that e'er did teach
To make, and how to stop, a breach. 360
A lance he bore with iron pike;
Th' one half wou'd thrust, the other strike;

And when their forces he had join'd;
He scorn'd to turn his parts behind.

He TRULLA lov'd; TRULLA, more bright 365
Than burnish'd armour of her Knight :
A bold virago, stout and tall,
As d JOAN of FRANCE, or English MALL;
Thro' perils both of wind and limb,
Thro' thick and thin, she follow'd him, 370
In ev'ry adventure h' undertook,
And never him or it forsook.

At breach of wall, or hedge surprise,
She shar'd i' th' hazard and the prize :
At beating quarters up, or forage, 375
Behav'd herself with matchless courage ;
And laid about in fight more busily
Than the e Amazonian dame Penthesile.

And though some criticks here cry shame,
And say our authors are to blame, 380
That (spite of all philosophers,
Who hold no females stout, but bears;
And heretofore did so abhor
That women should pretend to war,
They wou'd not suffer the stoutest dame 385
To swear f by HERCULES's name)
Make feeble ladies, in their works,
To fight like termagants and Turks;
To lay their native arms aside,
Their modesty, and ride astride; 390
To run a-tilt at men, and wield
Their naked tools in open field ;
As stout e ARMIDA, bold THALESTRIS,
And she that wou'd have been the mistress
Of h GUNDIBERT; but he had grace, 395
And rather took a country lass ;

PART I. CANTO II.

41

They say, 'tis false, without all sense,
 But of pernicious consequence
 To government, which they suppose
 Can never be upheld in prose ; 400
 Strip nature naked to the skin,
 You'll find about her no such thing.
 It may be so; yet what we tell
 Of *TRULLA* that's improbable,
 Shall be depos'd by those who've seen't, 405
 Or, what's as good, produc'd in print :
 And if they will not take our word,
 We'll prove it true upon record.
 The upright *CERDON* next advanc't,
 Of all his race the valiant'st : 410
CERDON the Great, renown'd in song,
 Like *HERC'LES*, for repair of wrong :
 Herais'd the low, and fortify'd
 The weak against the strongest side :
 Ill has he read, that never hit 415
 On him in *Muses'* deathless writ.
 He had a weapon keen and fierce,
 That through a bull-hide shield wou'd pierce,
 And cut it in a thousand pieces, 420
 Tho' tougher than the Knight of Greece his,
 With whom his black-thumb'd ancestor
 Was comrade in the ten years war :
 For when the restless Greeks sat down
 So many years before *Troy town*, 425
 And were renown'd, as *HOMER* writes,
 For well-soal'd boots no less than fights,
 They ow'd that glory only to
 His ancestor, that made them so.
 Fast friend he was to *REFORMATION*, 430
 Until 'twas worn quite out of fashion.

Next rectifier of wry LAW,
 And wou'd make three to cure one flaw.
 Learned he was, and could take note,
 Transcribe, collect, translate, and quote. 435
 But PREACHING was his chiefest talent,
 Or argument, in which b'ing valiant,
 He us'd to lay about and stickle,
 Like ram or bull, at conventicle :
 For disputants, like rams and bulls, 440
 Do fight with arms that spring from skulls.
 Last COLON came, bold man or war,
 Destin'd to blows by fatal star ;
 Right expert in command of horse ;
 But cruel, and without remorse. 445
 That which of CENTAUR long ago
 Was said, and has been wrested to
 Some other knights, was true of this ;
 He and his horse were of a piece.
 One spirit did inform them both ; 450
 The self-same vigour, fury, wroth :
 Yet he was much the rougher part,
 And always had a harder heart ;
 Although his horse had been of those
 That fed on man's flesh, as fame goes. 455
 Strange food for horse ! and yet, alas !
 It may be true, for flesh is grass.
 Sturdy he was, and no less able
 Than HERCULES to clean a stable ;
 As great a drover, and as great 460
 A critic too, in hog or neat.
 He ripp'd the womb up of his mother,
 Dame Tellus, 'cause she wanted fother
 And provender wherewith to feed
 Himself, and his less cruel steed. 465

PART I. CANTO II.

43

It was a question, whether he
Or's horse were of a family
More worshipful : 'till antiquaries
(After th' had almost por'd out their eyes)
Did very learnedly decide 470

The business on the horse's side;
And prov'd not only horse, but cows,
Nay, pigs, were of the elder house :
For beasts, when man was but a piece
Of earth himself, did th' earth possess. 475

These worthies were the chief that led
The combatants, each in the head
Of his command, with arms and rage,
Ready and longing to engage.

The numerous rabble was drawn out 480
Of sev'ral counties round about,

From villages remote, and shires,
Of east and western hemispheres :
From foreign parishes and regions,
Of different manners, speech, religions, 485

Came men and mastiffs ; some to fight
For fame and honour, some for sight.
And now the field of death, the lists,
Were enter'd by antagonists,

And blood was ready to be broach'd, 490
When HUDIBRAS in haste approach'd,
With Squire and weapons, to attack 'em :
But first thus from his horse bespake 'em :

What rage, O citizens ! what fury
Doth you to these dire actions hurry ? 495
What loe-strum, what phrenetic mood,
Makes you thus lavish of your blood,
While the proud Vies your trophies boast
And unreveng'd walks —— ghost ?

What towns, what garrisons might you 500
 With hazard of this blood subdue,
 Which now y'are bent to throw away
 In vain, untriumphable fray!
 Shall SAINTS in civil bloodshed wallow
 Of Saints, and let the CAUSE lie fallow? 505
 The Cause for which we fought and swore
 So boldly, shall we now give o'er?
 Then, because quarrels still are seen
 With oaths and swearings to begin,
 The SOLEMN LEAGUE and COVENANT 510
 Will seem a mere God-dam-me rant;
 And we, that took it, and have fought,
 As lewd as drunkards that fall out.
 For as we make war *for the King*
 Against himself the self-same thing, 515
 Some will not stick to swear we do
 For God and for Religion too:
 For if bear-baiting we allow,
 What good can Reformation do?
 The blood and treasure that's laid out, 520
 Is thrown away, and goes for nought.
 Are these the fruits o' th' PROTESTATION,
 The Prototype of Reformation,
 Which all the Saints, and some, since Martyrs,
 Wore ^k in their hats like wedding garters, 525
 When 'twas ^l resolv'd by either House
 Six Members quarrel to espouse?
 Did they for this draw down the rabble,
 With zeal and noises formidable,
 And make all cries about the town 530
 Join throats to cry the Bishops down?
 Who having round begirt the palace,
 (*As once a month they do the gallows,*)

PART. I. CANTO II.

43

As members gave the sign about,
 Set up their throats with hideous shout. 535
 When tinkers bawl'd aloud to settle
 Church discipline, for patching kettle :
 No sow-gelder did blow his horn
 To geld a cat, but cry'd, Reform.
 The oyster-women lock'd their fish up, 540
 And trudg'd away, to cry, No Bishop.
 The mouse-trap men laid save-alls by,
 And 'gainst Ev'l Counsellors did cry:
 Botchers left old cloaths in the lurch,
 And fell to turn and patch the Church. 545
 Some cry'd the Covenant instead
 Of pudding-pies and ginger-bread ;
 And some for brooms, old boots and shoes,
 Bawl'd out to Purge the Commons House.
 Instead of kitchen-stuff, some cry, 550
 A Gospel-preaching Ministry ;
 And some, for old suits, coats, or cloak,
 No Surplices nor Service-Book.
 A strange harmonious inclination
 Of all degrees to Reformation. 555
 And is this all ? Is this the end
 To which these carr'ings on did tend ?
 Hath public faith, like a young heir,
 For this ta'en up all sorts of ware,
 And run int' every tradesman's book, 560
 Till both turn'd bankrupts, and are broke ?
 Did Saints for this bring in their plate,
 And crowd as if they came too late ?
 For when they thought the Cause had need on't,
 Happy was he that could be rid on't. 565
 Did they coin piss-pots; bowls, and flaggons,
 Int' officers of horse and dragons ;

And into pikes and musquetteers
 Stamp beakers, cups, and porringers?
 A thimble, bodkin, and a spoon,
 Did start up living men as soon
 As in the furnace they were thrown,
 Just like the dragon's teeth b'ing sown.
 Then was the Cause of gold and plate,
 The Brethren's off'rings, consecrate,
 Like th' Hebrew calf, and down before it
 The Saints fell prostrate, to adore it:
 So say the wicked—and will you
 Make that ^m sarcasmus scandal true,
 By running after dogs and bears?
 Beasts more unclean than calves or steers.
 Have pow'rful Preachers ply'd their tongues,
 And laid themselves out and their lungs;
 Us'd all means, both direct and sinister,
 I' th' pow'r of Gospel-preaching Minister?
 Have they invented tones to win
 The women, and make them draw in
 The men, as Indians with a female
 Tame elephant inveigle the male?
 Have they told Prov'dence what it must do,
 Whom to avoid, and whom to trust to?
 Discover'd th' enemy's design,
 And which way best to countermine?
 Prescrib'd what ways it hath to work,
 Or it will ne'er advance the Kirk?
 Told it the news o' th' last express,
 And after good or bad success,
 Made prayers, not so like petitions,
 As overtures and propositions,
 (*Such as the army did present*
To their creator, th' Parliament,)

PART I. CANTO IL.

47

In which they freely will confess
 They will not, cannot acquiesce,
 Unless the work be carry'd on
 In the same way they have begun, 605
 By setting Church and Common-weal
 All on a flame, bright as their zeal,
 On which the Saints were all a-gog,
 And all this for a bear and dog?
 The parliament drew up petitions 610
 To' itself, and sent them, like commissions,
 To well-affected persons down,
 In ev'ry city and great town,
 With pow'r to levy horse and men,
 Only to bring them back agen : 615
 For this did many, many a mile,
 Ride manfully in rank and file,
 With papers in their hats, that show'd
 As if they to the pillory rode.
 Have all these courses, these efforts, 620
 Been try'd by people of all sorts,
Velis & remis, omnibus nervis,
 And all t'advance the Cause's service?
 And shall all now be thrown away
 In petulant intestine fray? 625
 Shall we that in the Cov'nant swore,
 Each man of us to run before
 Another, still in Reformation,
 Give dogs and bears a dispensation?
 How will Dissenting Brethren relish it? 630
 What will malignants say? *videlicet,*
 That each man swore to do his best,
 To damn and perjure all the rest!
 And bid the *Devil* take the hin'most,
Which at this race is like to win most. 635

They'll say our bus'ness, to reform
 The Church and State, is but a worm;
 For to subscribe, unsight, unseen,
 To an unknown Church-discipline,
 What is it else, but before-hand 640
 T'engage, and after understand?
 For when we swore to carry on
 The present Reformation,
 According to the purest mode
 Of Churches best reform'd abroad, 645
 What did we else, but make a vow
 To do we know not what, nor how?
 For no three of us will agree,
 Where or what Churches these should be;
 And is indeed ⁿ the self-same case 650
 With theirs that swore *et cæteras*;
 Or the ° French League, in which men vow'd
 To fight to the last drop of blood.
 These slanders will be thrown upon
 The Cause and Work we carry on, 655
 If we permit men to run headlong
 T' exorbitances fit for Bedlam
 Rather than Gospel-walking times,
 When slightest sins are greatest crimes.
 But we the matter so shall handle, 660
 As to remove that odious scandal.
 In name of King and parliament,
 I charge ye all, no more foment
 This feud, but keep the peace between
 Your brethren and your countrymen; 665
 And to those places straight repair
 Where your respective dwellings are.
 But to that purpose first surrender
 The FIDDLER, as the prime offender,

PART I. CANTO II.

49

Th' incendiary vile, that is chief 670

Author and engineer of mischief;

That makes division between friends,

For profane and malignant ends.

He, and that engine of vile noise,

On which illegally he plays, 675

Shall (*dictum factum*) both be brought

To condign punishment, as they ought.

This must be done; and I would fain see

Mortal so sturdy as to gain-say:

For then I'll take another course, 680

And soon reduce you all by force.

This said, he clapp'd his hand on sword,

To shew he meant to keep his word.

But TALGOL, who had long suppress

Inflamed wrath in glowing breast, 685

Which now began to rage and burn as

Implacably as flame in furnace,

Thus answer'd him:—Thou vermin wretched

As e'er in measled pork was hatched;

Thou tail of worship, that dost grow 690

On rump of justice as of cow;

How dar'st thou, with that sullen luggage

O' th' self, old ir'n, and other baggage,

With which thy steed of bones and leather

Has broke his wind in halting hither; 695

How durst th', I say, adventure thus

T' oppose thy lumber against us?

Could thine impertinence find out

No work t' employ itself about,

Where thou, secure from wooden blow, 700

Thy busy vanity might'st show?

Was no dispute a-foot between

The caterwauling Brethren?

No subtle question rais'd among 705
 Those out-o-their wits, and those i' th' wrong;
 No prize between those combatants
 O' th' times, the Land and Water Saints;
 Where thou might'st stickle without hazard
 Of outrage to thy hide and mazzard;
 And not for want of bus'ness come 710
 To us to be so troublesome,
 To interrupt our better sort
 Of disputants, and spoil our sport?
 Was there no felony, no bawd,
 Cut-purse, no burglary abroad; 715
 No stolen pig, nor plunder'd goose,
 To tie thee up from breaking loose?
 No ale unlicens'd, broken hedge,
 For which thou statute might'st alledge,
 To keep thee busy from foul evil, 720
 And shame due to thee from the Devil?
 Did no committee sit, where he
 Might cut out journey-work for thee?
 And set th' a task, with subornation,
 To stitch up sale and sequestration; 725
 To cheat, with holiness and zeal,
 All parties, and the common-weal?
 Much better had it been for thee,
 H' had kept thee where th' art us'd to be;
 Or sent th' on bus'ness any whither, 730
 So he had never brought thee hither.
 But if th' hast brain enough in skull,
 To keep itself in lodging whole,
 And not provoke the rage of stones
 And cudgels to thy hide and bones; 735
 Tremble, and vanish, while thou may'st,
 Which I'll not promise if thou stay'st.

PART I. CANTO, II.

51

At this the Knight grew high in wrath,
And lifting hands and eyes up both,
Three times he smote on stomach stout, 740
From whence at length these words broke out :

Was I for this entitled Sir,
And girt with trusty sword and spur,
For fame and honor to wage battle,
Thus to be brav'd hy foe to cattle? 745

Not all that pride that makes thee swell
As big as thou dost blown-up veal;
Nor all thy tricks and sleights to cheat,
And sell thy carrion for good meat;
Not all thy magic to repair 750

Decay'd old age in tough lean ware;
Make nat'ral appear thy work,
And stop the gangrene in stale pork;
Not all that force that makes thee proud,
Because by bullock ne'er withstood; 755

Though arm'd with all thy cleavers, knives,
And axes made to hew down lives,
Shall save or help thee to evade
The hand of Justice, or this blade,
Which I, her sword-bearer, do carry, 760
For civil deed and military.

Nor shall those words of venom base,
Which thou hast from their native place,
Thy stomach, pump'd to fling on me,
Go unreveng'd, though I am free : 765

Thou down the same throat shalt devour 'em,
Like tainted beef, and pay dear for 'em.
Nor shall it e'er be said, that wight
With gantlet blue, and bases white,
And round blunt truncheon by his side, 770
So great a man at arms defy'd

With words far bitterer than wormwood,
 That would in Job or Grisel stir mood.
 Dogs with their tongues their wounds do heal;
 But men with hands, as thou shalt feel. 775

This said, with hasty rage he snatch'd
 His gun-shot, that in holsters watch'd;
 And bending cock, he level'd full
 Against th' outside of TALGOL's skull;
 Vowing that he shou'd ne'er stir further, 780
 Nor henceforth cow nor bullock murder.

But PALLAS came in shape of rust,
 And 'twixt the spring and hammer thrust
 Her Gorgon shield, which made the cock
 Stand stiff, as t'were transform'd to stock. 785

Mean while fierce TALGOL, gath'ring might,
 With rugged truncheon charg'd the Knight;
 But he with petronel upheav'd,
 Instead of shield, the blow receiv'd.

The gun recoil'd, as well it might, 790
 Not us'd to such a kind of fight;

And shrunk from its great master's gripe,
 Knock'd down and stunn'd by mortal stripe.

Then HUDIBRAS, with furious haste,
 Drew out his sword; yet not so fast, 795

But TALGOL first, with hardy thwack,
 Twice bruis'd his head, and twice his back.

But when his nut-brown sword was out,
 With stomach huge he laid about,

Imprinting many a wound upon 800
 His mortal foe, the truncheon.

The trusty cudgel did oppose
 Itself against dead-doing blows,

*To guard its leader from fell hane,
 And then reveng'd itself again. 805*

PART I. CANTO II.

And though the sword (some understood)
 In force had much the odds of wood,
 'Twas nothing so ; both sides were ballanc'd
 So equal, none knew which was valiant st :
 For wood with Honour b'ing engag'd, 810
 Is so implacably engag'd,
 Though iron hew and mangle sore,
 Wood wounds and bruises Honour more.
 And now both Knights were out of breath,
 Tir'd in the hot pursuit of death ; 815
 While all the rest amaz'd stood still,
 Expecting which should take or kill.
 This HUDIBRAS observ'd ; and fretting
 Conquest should be so long a getting,
 He drew up all his force into 820
 One body, and that into one blow.
 But TALGOL wisely avoided it
 By cunning sleight ; for had it hit,
 The upper part of him the blow
 Had slit as sure as that below. 825
 Meanwhile th' incomparable COLON,
 To aid his friend, began to fall on.
 Him RALPH encounter'd, and straight grew
 A dismal combat 'twixt them two :
 Th' one arm'd with metal, th' other with wood ; 830
 This fit for bruise, and that for blood.
 With many a stiff thwack, many a bang,
 Hard crab-tree and old iron rang ;
 While none that saw them cou'd divine
 Which side conquest would incline, 835
 'Till MAGNANO, who did envy
 At two should with so many men vie,
 A subtle stratagem of brain,
 Form'd what force cou'd ne'er attain ;

For he, by foul hap, having found 840
 Where thistles grew on barren ground,
 In haste he drew his weapon out,
 And having cropp'd them from the root,
 He clapp'd them underneath the tail
 Of steed, with pricks as sharp as nail. 845
 The angry beast did straight resent
 The wrong done to his fundament;
 Began to kick, and sting, and wince,
 As if h' had been beside his sense,
 Striving to disengage from thistle, 850
 That gall'd him sorely under his tail :
 Instead of which, he threw the pack
 Of Squire and baggage from his back ;
 And blund'ring still with smarting rump,
 He gave the Knight's steed such a thump 855
 As made him reel. The Knight did stoop,
 And sat on further side aslope.
 This TALGOL viewing, who had now
 By sleight escap'd the fatal blow,
 He rally'd, and again fell to't; 860
 For catching foe by nearer foot,
 He lifted with such might and strength,
 As would have hurl'd him thrice his length,
 And dash'd his brains (if any) out :
 But MARS, that still protects the stout, 865
 In pudding-time came to his aid,
 And under him the Bear convey'd ;
 The Bear, upon whose soft fur-gown
 The Knight with all his weight fell down.
 The friendly rug preserv'd the ground, 870
 And headlong Knight, from braise or wound ;
 Like feather-bed betwixt a wall
 And heavy brunt of cannon-ball.

PART I. CANTO II.

55

As Sancho on a blanket fell,
 And had no hurt, our's far'd as well 875
 In body; though his mighty spirit,
 B'ing heavy, did not so well bear it.
 The Bear was in a greater fright,
 Beat down and worsted by the Knight.
 He roar'd, and rag'd, and flung about, 880
 To shake off bondage from his snout.
 His wrath inflam'd, boil'd o'er, and from
 His jaws of death he threw the foam:
 Fury in stranger postures threw him,
 And more than herald ever drew him, 885
 He tore the earth which he had sav'd
 From squelch of Knight, and storm'd and rav'd,
 And vext the more because the harms
 He felt were 'gainst the law of arms:
 For men he always took to be 890
 His friends, and dogs the enemy;
 Who never so much hurt had done him,
 As his own side did falling on him.
 It griev'd him to the guts that they
 For whom h' had fought so many a fray, 895
 And serv'd with loss of blood so long,
 Shou'd offer such inhuman wrong;
 Wrong of unsoldier-like condition;
 For which he flung down his commission;
 And laid about him, till his nose 900
 From thrall of ring and cord broke loose.
 Soon as he felt himself enlarg'd,
 Through thickest of his foes he charg'd,
 And made way through th' amazed crew;
 Some he o'erran, and some o'erethrew, 905
 But took none; for by hasty flight
 He strove t' escape pursuit of Knight;

From whom he fled with as much haste
 And dread as he the rabble chas'd.
 In haste he fled, and so did they; 910
 Each and his fear a several way.

CROWDERO only kept the field;
 Not stirring from the place he held;
 Though beaten down and wounded sore,
 I' th' fiddle, and a leg that bore 915

One side of him; not that of bone,
 But much it's better, th' wooden one.
 He spying HUDIBRAS lie strow'd
 Upon the ground, like log of wood,
 With fright of fall, supposed wound, 920
 And loss of urine, in a swoond,

In haste he snatch'd the wooden limb,
 That hurt i' the ankle lay by him,
 And fitting it for sudden fight,
 Straight drew it up t' attack the Knight; 925

For getting up on stump and huckle,
 He with the foe began to buckle;
 Vowing to be reveng'd for breach
 Of crowd and skin upon the wretch,
 Sole author of all detriment 930
 He and his fiddle underwent.

But RALPHO (who had now begun
 T' adventure resurrection

From heavy squelch, and had got up
 Upon his legs, with sprained crup) 935

Looking about, beheld pernicious
 Approaching Knight from fell musician.

He snatch'd his whinyard up, that fled
 When he was falling off his steed,

(As rats do from a falling house,) 940

To hide itself from rage of blows;

PART I. CANTO II.

57

And, wing'd with speed and fury, flew
 To rescue Knight from black and blew;
 Which, e'er he cou'd atchieve, his sconce
 The leg encounter'd twice and once; 945
 And now 'twas rais'd to smite agen,
 When RALPHO thrust himself between.
 He took the blow upon his arm,
 To shield the Knight from further harm;
 And, joining wrath with force, bestaw'd 950
 On th' wooden member such a load,
 That down it fell, and with it bore
 CROWDERO, whom it propp'd before.
 To him the Squire right nimbly run,
 And setting conquering foot upon 955
 His trunk, thus spoke: What desp'rate frenzy
 Made thee (thou whelp of Sin!) to fancy
 Thyself, and all that coward rabble,
 T' encounter us in battle able?
 How durst th', I say, oppose thy curship 960
 'Gainst arms, authority, and worship?
 And HUDIBRAS or me provoke,
 Though all thy limbs, were heart of oke,
 And th' other half of thee as good
 To bear out blows, as that of wood? 965
 Cou'd not the whipping-post prevail
 With all its rhet'ric, nor the jail;
 To keep from flaying scourge thy skin,
 And ankle free from iron gin?
 Which now thou shalt—But first our care 970
 Must see how HUDIBRAS doth fare.
 This said, he gently rais'd the Knight,
 And set him on his bum upright.
 To rouse him from lethargic dump,
 He tweak'd his nose; with gentle thump 975

Knock'd on his breast; as if 't had been
 To raise the spirits lodg'd within.
 They, waken'd with the noise, did fly
 From inward room to window eye,
 And gently op'ning lid, the casement, 980
 Look'd out, but yet with some amazement.
 This gladded RALPHO much to see,
 Who thus bespoke the Knight: quoth he,
 Tweaking his nose, You are, great Sir,
 A self-denying conqueror; 985
 As high, victorious, and great,
 As e'er fought for the Churches yet,
 If you will give yourself but leave
 To make out what y' already have;
 That's victory. The foe, for dread 990
 Of your nine-worthiness, is fled:
 All, save CROWDERO, for whose sake
 You did th' espous'd Cause undertake;
 And he lies pris'ner at your feet,
 To be dispos'd as you think meet; 995
 Either for life, or death, or sale,
 The gallows, or perpetual jail;
 For one wink of your powerful eye
 Must sentence him to live or die.
 His fiddle is your proper purchase, 1000
 Won in the service of the Churches;
 And by your doom must be allow'd
 To be, or be no more, a crowd.
 For though success did not confer
 Just title on the conqueror; 1005
 Though dispensations were not strong
 Conclusions, whether right or wrong;
Although out-goings did confirm,
And owning were but a mere term;

PART I. CANTO II.

59

Yet as the wicked have no right 1010
 To th' creature, though usurp'd by might,
 The property is in the Saint,
 From whom th' injuriously detain 't;
 Of him they hold their luxuries,
 Their dogs, their horses, whores, and dice, 1015
 Their riots, revels, masks, delights,
 Pimps, buffoons, fiddlers, parasites;
 All which the Saints have title to,
 And ought t' enjoy, if th' had their due.
 What we take from them is no more 1020
 Than what was our's by right before;
 For we are their true landlords still,
 And they our tenants but at will.
 At this the Knight began to rouse,
 And by degrees grow valorous. 1025
 He star'd about, and seeing none
 Of all his foes remain, but one,
 He snatch'd his weapon, that lay near him,
 And from the ground began to rear him;
 Vowing to make CAOWDERO pay 1030
 For all the rest that ran away.
 But BALPHO now, in colder blood,
 His fury mildly thus withstood:
 Great Sir, quoth he, your mighty spirit
 Is rais'd too high: this slave does merit 1035
 To be the hangman's bus'ness, sooner
 Than from your hand to have the honour
 Of his destruction. I, that am
 A nothingness in deed and name
 Did scorn to hurt his forfeit carcase, 1040
 Or ill intreat his fiddle or case:
 Will you, great Sir, that glory blot
 In cold blood which you gain'd in hot?

Will you employ your conqu'ring sword
 To break a fiddle and your word? 1045
 For though I fought, and overcame,
 And quarter gave, 'twas in your name.
 For great commanders only own
 What's prosperous by the soldier done:
 To save, where you have pow'r to kill, 1050
 Argues your pow'r above your will;
 And that your will and pow'r have less
 Than both might have of selfishness.
 This pow'r which, now alive, with dread
 He trembles at, if he were dead, 1055
 Wou'd no more keep the slave in awe,
 Than if you were a Knight of straw:
 For death would then be his conqueror,
 Not you, and free him from that terror.
 If danger from his life accrue, 1060
 Or honour from his death, to you,
 'Twere policy, and honour too,
 To do as you resolv'd to do:
 But, Sir, 'twou'd wrong your valour much,
 To say it needs or fears a crutch. 1065
 Great conquerors greater glory gain
 By foes in triumph led, than slain:
 The laurels that adorn their brows
 Are pull'd from living not dead boughs;
 And living foes: the greatest fame 1070
 Of cripple slain can be but lame.
 One half of him's already slain,
 The other is not worth your pain;
 Th' honour can but on one side light,
 As worship did, when y' were dubb'd Knight. 1075
*Wherefore I think it better far
 To keep him prisoner of war;*

And let him fast in bonds abide,
 At court of Justice to be try'd;
 Where, if he appear so bold and crafty, 1080
 There may be danger in his safety.
 If any member there dislike
 His face, or to his beard have pique;
 Or if his death will save or yield,
 Revenge or fright, it is reveal'd. 1085
 Though he has quarter, ne'er the less
 Y' have power to hang him when you please.
 This has been often done by some
 Of our great conqu'rors, you know whom;
 And has by most of us been held 1090
 Wise Justice, and to some reveal'd.
 For words and promises, that yoke
 The conqueror, are quickly broke;
 Like *SAMPSON*'s cuffs, though by his own
 Direction and advice put on. 1095
 For if we should fight for the *CAUSE*
 By rules of military laws,
 And only do what they call just,
 The Cause would quickly fall to dust.
 This we among ourselves may speak; 1100
 But to the wicked, or the weak,
 We must be cautious to declare
 Perfection-truths, such as these are.
 This said, the high outrageous mettle
 Of Knight began to cool and settle. 1105
 He lik'd the Squire's advice, and soon
 Resolv'd to see the business done;
 And therefore charg'd him first to bind
CROWDERO's hands on rump behind,
 And to its former place and use, 1110
 The wooden member to reduce;

But force it take an oath before,
Ne'er to bear arms against him more.

RALPHO dispatch'd with speedy haste,
And having ty'd CROWDERO fast, 1115

He gave Sir Knight the end of cord,
To lead the captive of his sword
In triumph, whilst the steeds he caught,
And them to further service brought.

The Squire in state rode on before, 1120

And on his nut-brown whinyard bore
The trophee-fiddle and the case,
Leaning on shoulder-like a mace.

The Knight himself did after ride,
Leading CROWDERO by his side; 1125

And tow'd him, if he lagg'd behind,
Like boat against the tide and wind.

Thus grave and solemn they march'd on,
Until quite thro' the town th' had gone;
At further end of which there stands 1130

An ancient castle, that commands
Th' adjacent parts: in all the fabrick
You shall not see one stone nor a brick;
But all of wood; by pow'rful spell
Of magic made impregnable. 1135

There's neither iron-bar nor gate,
Portcullis, chain, nor bolt, nor grate,
And yet men durance there abide,
In dungeon scarce three inches wide;
With roof so low, that under it 1140

They never stand, but lie or sit;

And yet so foul, that whoso is in,

Is to the middle-leg in prison;

In circle magical confin'd,

With walls of subtile air and wind, 1145

PART I. CANTO II.

63

Which none are able to break thorough,
 Until they're freed by head of borough.
 Thither arriv'd, th' advent'rous Knight
 And bold Squire from their steeds alight
 At th' outward wall, near which there stands
 A bastile, built to imprison hands; 1151
 By strange enchantment made to fetter
 The lesser parts, and free the greater;
 For though the body may creep through,
 The hands in grate are fast enough; 1155
 And when a circle 'bout the wrist
 Is made by beadle exorcist,
 The body feels the spur and switch,
 As if 'twere ridden post by witch
 At twenty miles an hour pace, 1160
 And yet ne'er stirs out of the place.
 On top of this there is a spire,
 On which Sir Knight first bids the Squire,
 The fiddle and its spoils, the case,
 In manner of a trophee place, 1165
 That done, they ope the trap-door gate,
 And let CROWDERO down thereat;
 CROWDERO making doleful face,
 Like hermit poor in pensive place.
 To dungeon they the wretch commit, 1170
 And the survivor of his feet:
 But th' other, that had broke the peace
 And head of Knighthood, they release;
 Though a delinquent false and forged,
 Yet be'ing a stranger, he's enlarged; 1175
 While his comrade, that did no hurt,
 Is clapp'd up fast in prison for't.
*So Justice, while she winks at crimes,
 Stumbles on innocence sometimes,*

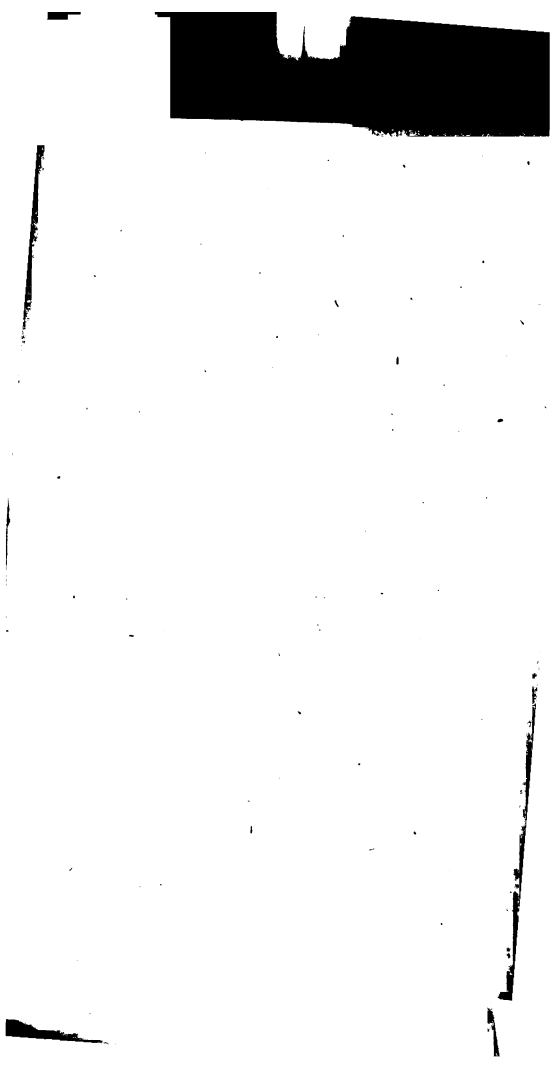
PART I: CANTO III.

THE ARGUMENT.

The scatter'd rout return and rally,
Surround the place ; the Knight does sally,
And is made pris'ner : Then they sieze
Th' enchanted fort by storm ; release
Crowdero, and put the Squire in's place ;
I should have first said Hudibras.

AH me ! what perils do environ
The man that meddles with cold iron !
What plaguy mischiefs and mishaps
Do dog him still with after-claps !
For though dame Fortune seem to smile 5
And leer upon him for a while,
She'll after shew him, in the nick
Of all his glories, a dog-trick.
This any man may sing or say,
I' th' ditty call'd, What if a Day ? 10
For HUDIBRAS, who thought h' had won
The field, as certain as a gun ;
And having routed the whole troop,
With victory was cock a-heop ;
Thinking h' had done enough to purchase 15
Thanksgiving-day among the Churches,
Wherein his mettle, and brave worth,
Might be explain'd by Holder-forth,
And register'd, by fame eternal,
In deathless pages of diurnal ; 20
Found in few minutes, to his cost,
He did but count without his host ;





And that a turn-stile is more certain
Than, in events of war, dame Fortune.

For now the late faint-hearted rout,
O'erthrown, and scatter'd round about,

2

Chas'd by the horror of their fear

From bloody fray of Knight and Bear,

(All but the dogs, who, in pursuit

Of the Knight's victory, stood to't,

3

And most ignobly fought to get

The honour of his blood and sweat,)

Seeing the coast was free and clear

O' th' conquer'd and the conqueror,

Took heart again, and fac'd about,

3

As if they meant to stand it out :

For by this time the routed Bear,

Attack'd by th' enemy i' th' rear,

Finding their number grew too great

For him to make a safe retreat,

4

Like a bold chieftain, fac'd about ;

But wisely doubting to hold out,

Gave way to Fortune, and with haste

Fac'd the proud foe, and fled, and fac'd ;

Retiring still, until he found

4

H' had got the advantage of the ground ;

And then as valiantly made head

To check the foe, and forthwith fled ;

Leaving no art untry'd, nor trick

Of warrior stout and politick,

5

Until, in spite of hot pursuit,

He gain'd a pass to hold dispute

On better terms, and stop the course

Of the proud foe. With all his force

He bravely charg'd, and for a while

Forc'd their whole body to recoil ;

But still their numbers so increas'd,
 He found himself at length oppress'd,
 And all evasions, so uncertain,
 To save himself for better fortune, 60
 That he resolv'd, rather than yield,
 To die with honour in the field,
 And sell his hide and carcase at
 A price as high and desperate
 As e'er he could. This resolution 65
 He forthwith put in execution,
 And bravely threw himself among
 The enemy i' th' greatest throng.
 But what cou'd single valour do
 Against so numerous a foe? 70
 Yet much he did indeed, too much
 To be believ'd, where th' odds were such.
 But one against a multitude
 Is more than mortal can make good.
 For while one party he oppos'd, 75
 His rear was suddenly inclos'd;
 And no room left him for retreat,
 Or fight against a foe so great.
 For now the mastives, charging home,
 To blows and handy gripes were come: 80
 While manfully himself he bore,
 And setting his right-foot before,
 He rais'd himself, to shew how tall
 His person was above them all.
 This equal shame and envy stirr'd 85
 In th' enemy, that one should beard
 So many warriors, and so stout,
 As he had done, and stav'd it out,
Disdaining to lay down his arms,
And yield on honourable terms. 90

PART I. CANTO III.

67

Enraged thus, some in the rear
 Attack'd him, and some ev'ry where,
 Till down he fell; yet falling fought,
 And, being down, still laid about;
 As WIDDRINGTON, in doleful dumps, 95
 Is said to fight upon his stumps.

But all, alas! had been in vain,
 And he inevitably slain,
 If TRULLA and CERDON, in the nick,
 To rescue him had not been quick; 100
 For TRULLA, who was light of foot

As shafts which long-field Parthians shoot,
 (But not so light as to be borne
 Upon the ears of standing corn,
 Or trip it o'er the water quicker 105

Than witches, when their staves they liquor,
 As some report,) was got among
 The foremost of the martial throng:
 There pitying the vanquish'd Bear,
 She call'd to CERDON, who stood near, 110

Viewing the bloody fight; to whom,
 Shall we (quoth she) stand sti'l hum-drum,
 And see stout Bruin all alone,
 By numbers basely overthrown?

Such feats already h' has atchiev'd, 115
 In story not to be believ'd;

And 'twould to us be shame enough,
 Not to attempt to fetch him off.

I would (quoth he) venture a limb
 To second thee, and rescue him: 120

But then we must about it straight,
 Or else our aid will come too late,
 Quarter he *scorns*, he is so stout,
 And therefore cannot long hold out.

This said, they wav'd their weapons round 125
 About their heads, to clear the ground ;
 And joining forces, laid about
 So fiercely, that th' amazed rout
 Turn'd tale again, and straight begun,
 As if the Devil drove, to run, 130
 Meanwhile th' approach'd th' place where Bruin
 Was now engag'd to mortal ruin.
 The conqu'ring foe they soon assail'd ;
 First TRULLA p stav'd, and CERDON tail'd,
 Until their mastives loos'd their hold : 135
 And yet, alas ! do what they could,
 The worsted Bear came off with store
 Of bloody wounds, but all before :
 For as ACHILLES, dipt in pond,
 Was ANABAPTIZ'D free from wound, 140
 Made proof against dead-doing steel
 All over, but the Pagan heel ;
 So did our champion's arms defend
 All of him, but the other end,
 His head and ears, which, in the martial 145
 Encounter, lost a leathern parcel :
 For as an Austrian Archduke once
 Had one ear (which in ducatoons
 Is half the coin) in battle par'd
 Close to his head, so Bruin far'd ; 150
 But tugg'd and pull'd on th' other side,
 Like scriv'ner newly crucify'd ;
 Or like the late & corrected leathern
 Ears of the Circumcised Brethren.
 But gentle TRULLA into th' ring 155
 He wore in's nose convey'd a string,
With which she march'd before, and led
The warrior to a grassy bed,

PART I. CANTO III.

69

As authors write, in a cool shade,
Which eglantine and roses made ; 160
Close by a softly murm'ring stream,
Where lovers us'd to loll and dream.

There leaving him to his repose,
Secured from pursuit of foes,
And wanting nothing but a song, 165

And a well-tun'd theorbo hung
Upon a bough, to ease the pain
His tugg'd ears suffer'd, with a strain,
They both drew up, to march in quest
Of his great leader and the rest. 170

For ORSIN (who was more renown'd
For stout maintaining of his ground
In standing fight, than for pursuit,
As being not so quick of foot)
Was not long able to keep pace 175

With others that pursu'd the chace ;
But found himself left far behind,
Both out of heart and out of wind :
Griev'd to behold his Bear pursu'd
So basely by a multitude ; 180

And like to fall, not by the prowess,
But numbers of his coward foes.
He rag'd, and kept as heavy a coil as
Stout HERCULES for loss of HYLAS ;
Forcing the vallies to repeat 185

The accents of his sad regret.
He beat his breast, and tore his hair,
For loss of his dear Crony Bear ;
That Eccho, from the hollow ground,
His doleful *wailings* did resound 190

*More wistfully, by many times,
Than in small poets splay-foot rhimes,*

That make her, in their rueful stories
 To answer to int'rogatories,
 And most unconscionably depose 195
 To things of which she nothing knows;
 And when she has said all she can say,
 'Tis wrested to the lover's fancy.
 Quoth he, O whither, wicked Bruin!
 Art thou fled to my—Eccho, Ruin? 200
 I thought th' hadst scorn'd to budge a step
 For fear. (Quoth Eccho) Marry guep.
 Am not I here to take thy part?
 Then what has quelled thy stubborn heart?
 Have these bones rattled, and this head 205
 So often in thy quarrel bled?
 Nor did I ever winch or grudge it,
 For thy dear sake. (Quoth she) Mum budget
 Think'st thou 'twill not be laid i' th' dish
 'Thou turn'dst thy back? Quoth Eccho, Pish. 210
 To run from those th' hast overcome
 Thus cowardly? Quoth Eccho, Mum.
 But what a vengeance makes thee fly
 From me too, as thine enemy?
 Or if thou hast no thought of me, 215
 Nor what I have endur'd for thee,
 Yet shame and honour might prevail
 To keep thee thus from turning tail:
 For who would grudge to spend his blood in
 His honour's cause? Quoth she, A puddin. 220
 This said, his grief to anger turn'd,
 Which in his manly stomach burn'd;
 Thirst of revenge, and wrath, in place
 Of sorrow, now began to blaze.
 He vow'd the authors of his woe 225
 Should equal vengeance undergo;

PART I. CANTO III.

71

And with their bones and flesh pay dear
 For what he suffer'd, and his Bear.
 This b'ing resolv'd, with equal speed
 And rage he hasted to proceed 230
 To action straight, and giving o'er
 To search for Bruin any more,
 He went in quest of HUDIBRAS,
 To find him out where-e'er he was;
 And, if he were above ground, vow'd 235
 He'd ferret him, lurk where he wou'd.

But scarce had he a furlong on
 This resolute adventure gone,
 When he encounter'd with that crew
 Whom HUDIBRAS did late subdue. 240
 Honour, revenge, contempt, and shame,
 Did equally their breasts inflame.
 'Mong these the fierce MAGNANO was,
 And TALOOL, foe to HUDIBRAS;
 CERDON and COLON, warriors stout, 245
 As resolute, as ever fought;
 Whom furious ORSTN thus bespoke:
 Shall we (quoth he) thus basely brook
 The vile affront that paltry ass,
 And feeble scoundrel, HUDIBRAS, 250
 With that more paltry ragamuffin,
 RALPHO, with vapouring and huffing,
 Have put upon us like tame cattle,
 As if th' had routed us in battle?
 For my part, it shall ne'er be said, 255
 I for the washing gave my head:
 Nor did I turn my back for fear
 O' th' rascals, but loss of my Bear,
 Which now I'm like to undergo;
 For whether those fell wounds, or no, 260

He has receiv'd in fight, ate mortal,
 Is more than all my skill can foretell;
 Nor do I know what is become
 Of him, more than the Pope of Rome.
 But if I can but find them out 265
 That caus'd it (as I shall, no doubt,
 Where-e'er th' in hugger-mugger lurk)
 I'll make them rue their handy-work;
 And wish that they had rather dar'd
 To pull the Devil by the beard. 270

Quoth CERDON, Noble ORSIN, th' hast
 Great reason to do as thou say'st,
 And so has ev'ry body here,
 As well as thou hast, or thy Bear.
 Others may do as they see good; 275
 But if this twig be made of wood
 That will hold tack, I'll make the fur
 Fly 'bout the ears of that old cur;
 And the other mungrel vermin, RALPH,
 That brav'd us all in his behalf. 280
 Thy Bear is safe, and out of peril,
 Though lugg'd indeed, and wounded very ill;
 Myself and TRULLA made a shift
 To help him out at a dead lift;
 And, having brought him bravely off, 285
 Have left him where he's safe enough:
 There let him rest; for if we stay,
 The slaves may hap to get away.

This said, they all engag'd to join
 Their forces in the same design; 290
 And forthwith put themselves in search
 Of HUDIBRAS upon their march.
 Where leave we them awhile, to tell
 What the victorious Knight befel:

PART I. CANTO III

73

For such, **CROWDERO** being fast 295
 In dungeon shut, we left him last.
 Triumphant laurels seem'd to grow
 No where so green as on his brow ;
 Laden with which, as well as tir'd
 With conquering toil, he now retir'd 300
 Unto a neighb'ring castle by,
 To rest his body, and apply
 Fit med'cines to each glorious bruise
 He got in fight, reds, blacks, and blues,
 To mollify th' uneasy pang 305
 Of ev'ry honourable bang,
 Which b'ing by skilful midwife drest,
 He laid him down to take his rest.
 But all in vain. H' had got a hurt
 O' th' inside, of a deadlier sort, 310
 By **CUPID** made, who took his stand
 Upon a Widow's jointure land,
 (For he, in all his am'rous battels,
 No 'dvantage finds like goods and chattels,)
 Drew home his bow, and, aiming right, 315
 Let fly an arrow at the Knight :
 The shaft against a rib did glance,
 And gall'd him in the purtenance.
 But time had somewhat 'swag'd his pain,
 After he found his suit in vain. 320
 For that proud dame, for whom his soul
 Was burnt in's belly like a coal,
 (That belly which so oft did ake
 And suffer griping for her sake,
 Till purging comfits and ants-eggs 325
 Had almost brought him off his legs,)
 Us'd him so like a base rascallion,
 That *old Pyg*—(what d'y' call him)—*malion*.

That cut his mistress out of stone,
 Had not so hard a-hearted one. 330
 She had a thousand jadish tricks,
 Worse than a mule that flings and kicks;
 'Mong which one cross-grain'd freak she had,
 As insolent as strange and mad;
 She could love none, but only such 335
 As scorn'd and hated her as much.
 'Twas a strange riddle of a lady:
 Not love, if any lov'd her! Hey dey!
 So cowards never use their might,
 But against such as will not fight; 340
 So some diseases have been found
 Only to seize upon the sound.
 He that gets her by heart, must say her
 The back way, like a witch's prayer.
 Mean while the Knight had no small task 345
 To compass what he durst not ask.
 He loves, but dares not make the motion;
 Her ignorance is his devotion:
 Like caitiff vile, that, for misdeed,
 Rides with his face to rump of steed, 350
 Or rowing scull, he's fain to love,
 Look one way, and another move;
 Or like a tumbler, that does play
 His game, and look another way,
 Until he seize upon the cony; 355
 Just so he does by matrimony:
 But all in vain; her subtle snout
 Did quickly wind his meaning out;
 Which she return'd with too much scorn
 To be by man of honour borne: 360
 Yet much he bore, until the distress
 He suffer'd from his spiteful mistress.

PART I. CANTO III.

75

Did stir his stomach ; and the pain
He had endur'd from her disdain,
Turn'd to regret so resolute, 365
That he resolv'd to wave his suit,
And either to renounce her quite,
Or for a while play least in sight.

This resolution b'ing put on,
He kept some months, and more had done ; 370

But being brought so nigh by Fate,
The victory he atchiev'd so late
Did set his thoughts agog, and ope
A door to discontinu'd hope,
That seem'd to promise he might win 375

His dame too, now his hand was in ;
And that his valour, and the honour
H' had newly gain'd, might work upon her.
These reasons made his mouth to water
With am'rous longings to be at her. 380

Quoth he, unto himself, Who knows,
But this brave conquest o'er my foes
May reach her heart, and make that stoop,
As I but now have forc'd the troop ?
If nothing can oppugn love, 385

And virtue invious ways can prove,
What may he not confide to do
That brings both love and virtue too ?
But thou bring'st valour too and wit ;
Two things that seldom fail to hit. 390

Valour's a mouse-trap, wit a gin,
Which women oft are taken in.
Then, HUDIBRAS, why should'st thou fear
To be, that art a conqueror ?
Fortune th' audacious doth juvare, 395
But lets the timidous miscarry.

Then while the honour thou hast got
 Is spick and span new, piping hot,
 Strike her up bravely, thou hadst best,
 And trust thy fortune with the rest. 400
 Such thoughts as these the Knight did keep,
 More than his bangs or fleas, from sleep.
 And as an owl, that in a barn
 Sees a mouse creeping in the corn,
 Sits still, and shuts his round blue eyes, 405
 As if he slept, until he spies
 The little beast within his reach,
 Then starts, and seizes on the wretch;
 So from his couch the Knight did start
 To seize upon the widow's heart; 410
 Crying with hasty tone, and hoarse,
 RALPHO, dispatch; To Horse, To Horse.
 And 'twas but time; for now the rout,
 We left engag'd to seek him out,
 By speedy marches, were advanc'd 415
 Up to the fort, where he ensconc'd;
 And all th' avenues had possess
 About the place, from east to west.
 That done, a while they made a halt,
 To view the ground, and where t' assault: 420
 Then call'd a council, which was best,
 By siege or onslaught, to invest
 The enemy; and 'twas agreed,
 By storm and onslaught to proceed.
 This b'ing resolv'd, in comely sort 425
 They now drew up t' attack the fort;
 When HUDIBRAS, about to enter
 Upon another-gates adventure,
 To RALPHO call'd aloud to arm,
 Not dreaming of approaching storm. 430

PART I. CANTO III.

77

Whether Dame Fortune, or the care
 Of Angel bad or tutelar,
 Did arm, or thrust him on a danger
 To which he was an utter stranger ;
 That foresight might, or might not, blot 435
 The glory he had newly got ;
 Or to his shame it might be said,
 They took him napping in his bed ;
 To them we leave it to expound,
 That deal in sciences profound. 440
 His courser scarce he had bestrid,
 And RALPHO that on which he rid,
 When setting open the postern gate,
 Which they thought best to sally at,
 The foe appear'd, drawn up and drill'd, 445
 Ready to charge them in the field.
 This somewhat startled the bold Knight,
 Surpriz'd with th' unexpected sight.
 The bruises of his bones and flesh
 He thought began to smart afresh ; 450
 Till recollecting wonted courage,
 His fear was soon converted to rage,
 And thus he spoke : The coward foe,
 Whom we but now gave quarter to,
 Look, yonder's rally'd, and appears 455
 As if they had out-run their fears.
 The glory we did lately get,
 The Fates command us to repeat ;
 And to their wills we must succumb,
 Quocunque trahunt, 'tis our doom. 460
 This is the same numeric crew
 Which we so lately did subdue ;
 The self-same individuals that
 Did run as mice do from a cat,

When we courageously did wield 465
 Our martial weapons in the field
 To tug for victory ; and when
 We shall our shining blades agen
 Brandish in terror o'er our heads,
 They'll straight resume their wonted dreads. 470

Fear is an ague, that forsakes
 And haunts by fits those whom it takes :
 And they'll opine they feel the pain
 And blows they felt to-day again.
 Then let us boldly charge them home, 475
 And make no doubt to overcome.

This said, his courage to inflame,
 He call'd upon his mistress' name.
 His pistol next he cock'd a-new,
 And out his nut-brown whinyard drew ; 480
 And, placing RALPHO in the front,
 Reserv'd himself to bear the brunt,
 As expert warriors use : then ply'd
 With iron heel his courser's side,
 Conveying sympathetic speed 485
 From heel of Knight to heel of Steed.

Mean while the foe, with equal rage
 And speed, advancing to engage,
 Both parties now were drawn so close,
 Almost to come to handy-blows ; 490
 When ORSIN first let fly a stone
 At RALPHO : not so huge a one
 As that which DIOMED did maul
 ÆNEAS on the bum withal ;
 Yet big enough if rightly hurl'd, 495
 T' have sent him to another world,
 Whether above-ground, or below,
 Which Saints Twice Dipt are destin'd to.

PART I. CANTO III.

79

The danger startled the bold Squire,
 And made him some few steps retire. 500
 But HUDIBRAS advanc'd to's aid,
 And rouz'd his spirits, half dismay'd.
 He wisely doubting lest the shot
 Of th' enemy, now growing hot,
 Might at a distance gall, press'd close, 505
 To come pell-mell to handy-blows,
 And, that he might their aim decline,
 Advanc'd still in an oblique line ;
 But prudently forbore to fire,
 Till breast to breast he had got nigher, 510
 As expert warriors use to do
 When hand to hand they charge their foe.
 This order the advent'rous Knight,
 Most soldier-like, observ'd in fight,
 When fortune (as she's wont) turn'd fickle, 515
 And for the foe began to stickle.
 The more shame for her Goody-ship,
 To give so near a friend the slip.
 For COLON, choosing out a stone,
 Levell'd so right, it thump'd upon 520
 His manly paunch with such a force,
 As almost beat him off his horse.
 He lost his whinyard, and the rein ;
 But, laying fast hold of the mane,
 Preserv'd his seat ; and as a goose 525
 In death contracts his talons close,
 So did the Knight, and with one claw
 The trigger of his pistol draw.
 The gun went off : and as it was
 Still fatal to stout HUDIBRAS, 530
 In all his feats of arms, when least
 He dreamt of it, to prosper best,

So now he far'd : the shot, let fly
 At random 'mong the enemy,
 Pierc'd TALGOL's gaberdine, and grazing 535
 Upon his shoulder, in the passing,
 Lodg'd in MAGNANO's brass habergeon,
 Who straight, A Surgeon, cry'd, A Surgeon.
 He tumbled down, and, as he fell,
 Did Murther, Murther, Murther, yell. 540
 This startled their whole body so,
 That if the Knight had not let go
 His arms, but been in warlike plight,
 H' had won (the second time) the fight;
 As, if the Squire had but fall'n on, 545
 He had inevitably done :
 But he, diverted with the care
 Of HUDIBRAS his hurt, forbore
 To press th' advantage of his fortune
 While danger did the rest dishearten : 550
 For he with CERDON b'ing engag'd
 In close encounter, they both wag'd
 The fight so well, 'twas hard to say
 Which side was like to get the day.
 And now the busy work of death 555
 Had tir'd them so, th' agreed to breath,
 Preparing to renew the fight,
 When the disaster of the Knight,
 And th' other party, did divert
 Their fell intent, and forc'd them part. 560
 RALPHO press'd up to HUDIBRAS,
 And CERDON where MAGNANO was ;
 Each striving to confirm his party
 With stout encouragements, and hearty.
 Quoth RALPHO, Courage, valiant Sir, 565
 And let revenge and honour stir

PART I. CANTO. III.

81

Your spirits up: once more fall on,
 The shatter'd foe begins to run :
 For if but half so well you knew
 To use your victory as subdue, 570
 They durst not, after such a blow
 As you have given them, face us now ;
 But from so formidable a soldier
 Had fled like crows when they smell powder.
 Thrice have they seen your sword aloft 575
 Wav'd o'er their heads, and fled as oft.
 But if you let them recollect
 Their spirits, now dismay'd and checkt,
 You'll have a harder game to play
 Than yet y' have had to get the day. 580
 Thus spoke the stout Squire ; but was heard
 By HUDIBRAS with small regard.
 His thoughts were fuller of the bang
 He lately took than RALPH's harangue ;
 To which he answer'd, Cruel Fate 585
 Tells me thy counsel comes too late.
 The knotted blood within my hose,
 That from my wounded body flows,
 With mortal crisis doth portend
 My days to appropinque an end. 590
 I am for action now unfit,
 Either of fortitude or wit :
 Fortune, my foe, begins to frown,
 Resolv'd to pull my stomach down.
 I am not apt, upon a wound, 595
 Or trivial basting, to despond :
 Yet I'd be loth my days to curtail :
 For if I thought my wounds not mortal,
 Or that we'd time enough as yet,
 To make an hon'rabl retreat, 600

'Twere the best course : but if they find
 We fly, and leave our arms behind
 For them to seize on, the dishonour,
 And danger too, is such, I'll sooner
 Stand to it boldly, and take quarter, 605
 To let them see I am no starter.
 In all the trade of war, no feat
 Is nobler than a brave retreat :
 For those that run away, and fly,
 Take place at least of th' enemy. 610

This said, the Squire, with active speed
 Dismounted from his bonny steed,
 To seize the arms, which, by mischance,
 Fell from the bold Knight in a trance.
 These being found out, and restor'd 615
 To HUDIBRAS their natural lord,
 As a man may say, with might and main,
 He hasted to get up again.

Thrice he assay'd to mount aloft,
 But, by his weighty bum, as oft 620
 He was pull'd back, till having found
 Th' advantage of the rising ground,
 Thither he led his warlike steed,
 And having plac'd him right, with speed
 Prepar'd again to scale the beast, 625

When ORSIN, who had newly drest
 The bloody scar upon the shoulder
 Of TALGOL with Promethean powder,
 And now was searching for the shot
 That laid MAGNANO on the spot, 630
 Beheld the sturdy Squire aforesaid.
Preparing to climb up his horse side.
He left his cure, and laying hold
Upon his arms, with courage bold

PART I. CANTO III.

83

Cry'd out, 'Tis now no time to dally, 635

The enemy begin to rally :

Let us, that are unhurt and whole,

Fall on, and happy man be's dole.

This said, like to a thunderbolt,
He flew with fury to th' assault, 640

Striving the enemy to attack

Before he reach'd his horse's back.

RALPHO was mounted now, and gotten

O'erthwart his beast with active vaulting,
Wrigling his body to recover 645

His seat, and cast his right leg over,

When ORSIN, rushing in, bestow'd

On horse and man so heavy a load,

The beast was startled, and begun
To kick and fling like mad, and run, 650

Bearing the tough Squire like a sack,

Or stout king RICHARD, on his back,

'Till stumbling, he threw him down,

Sore bruis'd, and cast into a swoon.
Meanwhile the Knight began to rouse 655

The sparkles of his wonted prowess.

He thrust his hand into his hose,

And found, both by his eyes and nose,

'Twas only choler, and not blood,
That from his wounded body flow'd. 660

This, with the hazard of the Squire,

Inflam'd him with despightful ire.

Courageously he fac'd about.

And drew his other pistol out,

And now had half way bent the cock, 665

When CERDON gave so fierce a shock,

With sturdy truncheon, thwart his arm,

That down it fell, and did no harm :

Then stoutly pressing on with speed,
Assay'd to pull him off his steed; 670

The Knight his sword had only left,

With which he CERDON's head had cleft,

Or at the least cropt off a limb,

But ORSIN came, and rescu'd him.

He, with his lance, attack'd the Knight 675

Upon his quarters opposite.

But as a barque, that in foul weather,

Toss'd by two adverse winds together,

Is bruis'd, and beaten to and fro,

And knows not which to turn him to; 680

So far'd the Knight between two foes,

And knew not which of them t'oppose;

Till ORSIN, charging with his lance

At HUDIBRAS, by spightful chance,

Hit CERDON such a bang, as stunn'd 685

And laid him flat upon the ground.

At this the Knight began to chear up,

And, raising up himself on stirrup,

Cry'd out, Victoria! Lie thou there,

And I shall straight dispatch another; 690

To bear thee company in death:

But first I'll halt a while, and breath:

As well he might; for ORSIN, griev'd

At th' wound that CERDON had receiv'd,

Ran to relieve him with his lore, 695

And cure the hurt he gave before.

Mean while the Knight had wheel'd about,

To breathe himself, and next find out

Th' advantage of the ground, where best

He might the ruffled foe infest. 700

This b'ing resolv'd, he spur'd his steed,

To run at ORSIN with full speed,

PART I. CANTO III.

85

While he was busy in the care
Of CERDON'S wound, and unaware:
But he was quick, and had already 705
Unto the part apply'd remedy:
And, seeing th' enemy prepar'd,
Drew up, and stood upon his guard:
Then, like a warrior right expert
And skilful in the martial art, 710
The subtle Knight straight made a halt,
And judg'd it best to stay th' assault,
Until he had reliev'd the Squire,
And then in order to retire;
Or, as occasion should invite, 715
With forces join'd renew the fight.
RALPHO, by this time disentranc'd,
Upon his bum himself advanc'd,
Though sorely bruis'd; his limbs all o'er
With ruthless bangs were stiff and sore. 720
Right fain he would have got upon
His feet again, to get him gone;
When HUDIBRAS to aid him came:
Quoth he, (and call'd him by his name,)
Courage! the day at length is ours; 725
And we once more, as conquerors,
Have both the field and honour won:
The foe is profligate, and run.
I mean all such as can; for some
This hand hath sent to their long home; 730
And some lie sprawling on the ground;
With many a gash and bloody wound:
CÆSAR himself could never say
He got two victories in a day,
As I have done, that can say, Twice I 735
In one day, *Veni, Vidi, Vici.*

The foe's so numerous, that we
 Cannot so often *vincere*
 As they *perire*, and yet enow
 Be left to strike an after-blow ; 740
 Then, lest they rally, and once more
 Put us to fight the bus'ness o'er,
 Get up, and mount thy steed : Dispatch,
 And let us both their motions watch.

Quoth RALPH, I should not, if I were 745
 In case for action, now be here :
 Nor have I turn'd my back, or hang'd
 An arse, for fear of being bang'd.
 It was for you I got these harms,
 Advent'ring to fetch off your arms. 750
 The blows and drubs I have receiv'd
 Have bruis'd my body, -and bereav'd
 My limbs of strength. Unless you stoop,
 And reach your hand to pull me up,
 I shall lie here, and be a prey 755
 To those who now are run away.

That thou shalt not, (quoth HUDIRBAS ;) 760
 We read, the ancients held it was
 More honourable far, *servare*
Civem, than slay an adversary :
 The one we oft to-day have done,
 The other shall dispatch anon :
 And though th' art of a dif'rent Church
 I will not leave thee in the lurch.
 This said, he jogg'd his good steed nigher, 765
 And steer'd him gently toward the Squire ;
 Then bowing down his body, stretch'd
 His hand out, and at RALPHO reach'd ;
 When TRULLA, whom he did not mind,
 Charg'd him like lightening behind. 770

She had been long in search about
 MAGNANO's wound, to find it out;
 But could find none, nor where the shot,
 That had so startled him, was got.
 But having found the worst was past, 775
 She fell to her own work at last,
 The pillage of the prisoners,
 Which in all feats of arms was hers;
 And now to plunder RALPH she flew,
 When HUDIBRAS his hard fate drew 780
 To succour him; for, as he bow'd
 To help him up, she laid a load
 Of blows so heavy, and plac'd so well,
 On't other side, that down he fell.
 Yield, scoundrel base, (quoth she,) or die: 785
 Thy life is mine and liberty:
 But if thou think'st I took thee tardy,
 And dar'st presume to be so hardy,
 To try thy fortune o'er a-fresh,
 I'll wave my title to thy flesh, 790
 Thy arms and baggage, now my right;
 And if thou hast the heart to try't,
 I'll lend thee back thyself a while,
 And once more, for that carcass vile,
 Fight upon tick.—Quoth HUDIBRAS, 795
 Thou offer'st nobly, valiant lass,
 And I shall take thee at thy word.
 First let me rise and take my sword.
 That sword which has so oft this day
 Through squadrons of my foes made way, 800
 And some to other worlds dispatch'd,
 Now with a feeble spinster match'd,
 Will blush with blood ignoble stain'd,
 By which no honour's to be gain'd.

But if thou'lt take m' advice in this, 805
 Consider whilst thou may'st, what 'tis
 To interrupt a victor's course,
 B' opposing such a trivial force :
 For if with conquest I come off,
 (And that I shall do sure enough,) 810
 Quarter thou canst not have, nor grace,
 By law of arms, in such a case ;
 Both which I now do offer freely.
 I scorn (quoth she) thou coxcomb silly,
 (Clapping her hand upon her breech, 815
 To shew how much she priz'd his speech,)
 Quarter or counsel from a foe :
 If thou can'st force me to it, do.
 But lest it should again be said,
 When I have once more won thy head, 820
 I took thee napping, unprepar'd,
 Arm, and betake thee to thy guard.
 This said, she to her tackle fell,
 And on the Knight let fall a peal
 Of blows so fierce, and press'd so home, 825
 That he retir'd, and follow'd's hum.
 Stand to't (quoth she) or yield to mercy :
 It is not fighting arsie-versie
 Shall serve thy turn.—This stirr'd his spleen
 More than the danger he was in, 830
 The blows he felt, or was to feel,
 Although th' already made him reel.
 Honour, despight, revenge and shame,
 At once into his stomach came,
 Which fir'd it so, he rais'd his arm 835
 Above his head, and rain'd a storm
 Of blows so terrible and thick,
 As if he meant to hash her quick.

But she upon her trancheon took them,
 And by oblique diversion broke them, 840
 Waiting an opportunity
 To pay all back with usury ;
 Which long she fail'd not of ; for now
 The Knight with one dead-doing blow
 Resolving to decide the fight, 845
 And she, with quick and cunning slight,
 Avoiding it, the force and weight
 He charg'd upon it was so great,
 As almost sway'd him to the ground.
 No sooner she th' advantage found, 850
 But in she flew ; and seconding
 With home-made thrust the heavy swing,
 She laid him flat upon his side ;
 And mounting on his trunk a-stride,
 Quoth she, I told thee what would come 855
 Of all thy vapouring, base scum.
 Say, will the law of arms allow
 I may have grace and quarter now ?
 Or wilt thou rather break thy word,
 And stain thine honour than thy sword ? 860
 A man of war to damn his soul,
 In basely breaking his parole !
 And when, before the fight, th' had'st vow'd
 To give no quarter in cold blood :
 Now thou hast got me for a Tartar, 865
 To make me 'gainst my will take quarter ;
 Why dost not put me to the sword,
 But cowardly fly from thy word ?
 Quoth HUDIBRAS, The day's thine own :
 Thou and thy Stars have cast me down : 870
 My laurels are transplanted now,
 And flourish on thy conqu'ring brow :

My loss of honour's great enough,
 Thou need'st not brand it with a scoff :
 Sarcasms may eclipse thine own, 875
 But cannot blur my lost renown.

I am not now in Fortune's power ;
 He that is down can fall no lower.
 The ancient heroes were illustrious
 For being benign, and not blustrous, 880
 Against a vanquish'd foe : their swords
 Were sharp and trenchant, not their words ;
 And did in fight but cut work out
 To employ their courtesies about.

Quoth she, Although thou hast serv'd, 885
 Base slubberdegullion, to be serv'd
 As thou did'st vow to deal with me,
 If thou had'st got the victory ;
 Yet I shall rather act a part
 That suits my fame than thy desert. 890
 Thy arms, thy liberty, beside
 All that's on th' outside of thy hide,
 Are mine by military law,
 Of which I will not hate one straw :
 The rest, thy life and limbs, once more, 895
 Though doubly forfeit, I restore.

Quoth HUDIBRAS, It is too late
 For me to treat or stipulate :
 What thou command'st, I must obey :
 Yet those whom I expugn'd to-day 900
 Of thine own party, I let go,

And gave them life and freedom too :
 Both dogs and bear, upon their parole,
 Whom I took pris'ners in this quarrel.

Quoth TRULLA, Whether thou or they 905
 Let one another run away,

PART I. CANTO III.

91

Concerns not me ; but was't not thou
That gave CROWDERO quarter too ?
CROWDERO, whom, in irons bound,
Thou basely threw'st into LOB's Pound, 910
Where still he lies, and with regret
His gen'rous bowels rage and fret.
But now thy carcass shall redeem,
And serve to be exchang'd for him.

This said, the Knight did straight submit, 915
And laid his weapons at her feet.
Next he disrob'd his gaberdine,
And with it did himself resign.

She took it, and forthwith divesting
The mantle that she wore, said jesting, 920
Take that, and wear it for my sake ;
Then threw it o'er his sturdy back,
And as the FRENCH, we conquer'd once,
Now give us laws for pantaloons,
The length of breeches, and the gathers, 925
Port-cannons, perriwigs, and feathers ;
Just so the proud insulting lass
Array'd and dighted HUDIBRAS.

Mean while the other champions, yerst
In hurry of the fight disperst, 930
Arriv'd, when TRULLA won the day,
To share in th' honour and the prey,
And out of HUDIBRAS his hide
With vengeance to be satisfy'd ;
Which now they were about to pour 935
Upon him in a wooden show'r ;
But TRULLA thrust herself between,
And striding o'er his back agen,
She brandish'd o'er her head his sword,
And vow'd they should not break her word : 940

Sh' had giv'n him quarter, and her blood
 Or theirs should make that quarter good;
 For she was bound by law of arms
 To see him safe from further harms.
 In dungeon deep CROWDERO, cast 945
 By HUDIBRAS, as yet lay fast;
 Where, to the hard and ruthless stones,
 His great heart made perpetual moans:
 Him she resolv'd that HUDIBRAS
 Should ransom, and supply his place. 950

This stopt their fury, and the basting
 Which toward HUDIBRAS was hasting.
 They thought it was but just and right,
 That what she had atchiev'd in fight,
 She should dispose of how she pleas'd. 955
 CROWDERO ought to be releas'd;
 Nor could that any way be done
 So well as this she pitch'd upon:
 For who a better could imagine?
 This therefore they resolv'd t'engage in. 960
 The Knight and Squire first they made
 Rise from the ground, where they were laid:
 Then mounted both upon their horses,
 But with their faces to the arses,
 ORSIN led HUDIBRAS's beast, 965
 And TALGOL that which RALPHO prest,
 Whom stout MAGNANO, valiant CERDON,
 And COLON, waited as a guard on;
 All ush'ring TRULLA in the rear,
 With th' arms of either prisoner. 970

In this proud order and array
 They put themselves upon their way,
Striving to reach th' enchanted castle,
Where stout CROWDERO in durance lay still.

PART I. CANTO III.

93

Thither with greater speed than shows 975
 And triumph over conquer'd foes
 Do use t' allow, or than the bears
 Or pageants borne before Lord-Mayors
 Are wont to use, they soon arriv'd

• In order, soldier-like contriv'd; 980

Still marching in a warlike posture,
 As fit for battle as for muster.

The Knight and Squire they first unhorse,
 And bending 'gainst the fort their force,
 They all advanc'd, and round about 985
 Begirt the magical redoubt.

MAGNAN led up in this adventure,
 And made way for the rest to enter;
 For he was skilful in black art.

No less than he that built the fort; 990

And with an iron mace laid flat
 A breach, which straight all enter'd at,

And in the wooden dungeon found
 CROWDERO laid upon the ground.

Him they release from durance base, 995

Restor'd t' his fiddle and his case,

And liberty, his thirsty rage

With luscious vengeance to assuage:

For he no sooner was at large,

But TRULLA straight brought on the charge, 1000

And in the self-same limbo put

The Knight and Squire where he was shut;

Where leaving them in Hockley i' th' Hole,

Their bangs and durance to condole,

Confin'd and conjur'd into narrow 1005

Enchanted mansion to know sorrow,

In the same order and array

Which they advanc'd, they march'd away.

But HUDIBRAS, who scorn'd to stoop
 To Fortune, or be said to droop, 1010
 Cheer'd up himself with ends of verse,
 And sayings of philosophers.
 Quoth he, Th' one half of man, his mind,
 Is, *sui juris*, unconfin'd,
 And cannot be laid by the heels, 1015
 Whate'er the other moiety feels.
 'Tis not restraint or liberty
 That makes men prisoners or free ;
 But perturbations that possess
 The mind, or æquanimities. 1020
 The whole world was not half so wide
 To ALEXANDER, when he cry'd,
 Because he had but one to subdue,
 As was a paltry narrow tub to
 DIOGENES ; who is not said 1025
 (For aught that ever I could read)
 To whine, put finger i' th' eye, and sob,
 Because h' had ne'er another tub.
 The ancients make two sev'ral kinds
 Of prowess in heroic minds ; 1030
 The active, and the passive valiant ;
 Both which are *pari libere* gallant :
 For both to give blows, and to carry,
 In fights are *equi* necessary :
 But in defeats, the passive stout 1035
 Are always found to stand it out
 Most desp'rately, and to out-do
 The active 'gainst the conqu'ring foe.
 Tho' we with blacks and blues are suggill'd,
 Or, as the vulgar say, are cudgell'd ; 1040
 He that is valiant, and dares fight,
 Though drubb'd, can lose no honour by't.

PART I. CANTO III.

95

Honour's a lease for lives to comè,
And cannot be extended from
The legal tenant : 'tis a chattel 1045
Not to be forfeited in battel.

If he that in the field is slain,
Be in the bed of Honour lain,
He that is beaten, may be said
To lie in Honour's truckle-bed. 1050

For as we see th' eclipsed sun
By mortals is more gaz'd upon,
Than when, adorn'd with all his light,
He shines in serene sky most bright:
So valour, in a low estate, 1055
Is most admir'd and wonder'd at.

Quoth RALPH, How great I do not know
We may by being beaten grow ;
But none, that see how here we sit,
Will judge us overgrown with wit. 1060

As gifted brethren, preaching by
A carnal hour-glass, do imply,
Illumination can convey

Into them what they have to say,
But not how much ; so well enough 1065
Know you to charge, but not draw off :

For who, without a cap and bauble,
Having subdu'd a bear and rabble,
And might with honour have come off,
Would put it to a second proof ? 1070

A politic exploit, right fit
For Presbyterian zeal and wit.

Quoth HUDIBRAS, That cuckow's tone,
RALPH, thou always harp'st upon.

When thou at any thing would'st rail, 1075
Thou mak'st Presbytery the scale

To take the height on't, and explain
 To what degree it is prophane :
 Whats'ever will not with (thy what d'y'e call)
 Thy light jump right, thou call'st synodical ; 1080
 As if Presbytery were the standard
 To size whats'ever's to be slander'd.

Dost not remember how this day,
 Thou to my beard wast bold to say,
 That thou could'st prove bear-baiting equal
 With synods orthodox and legal ? 1086,
 Do if thou can'st ; for I deny't,
 And dare thee to 't with all thy light.

Quoth RALPHO, Truly that is no
 Hard matter for a man to do, 1090
 That has but any guts in 's brains,
 And cou'd believe it worth his pains ;
 But since you dare and urge me to it,
 You'll find I've light enough to do it.

Synods are mystical bear-gardens, 1095
 Where elders, deputies, church-wardens,
 And other members of the court,
 Manage the Babylonish sport ;
 For prolocutor, scribe, and bear-ward,
 Do differ only in a mere word ; 1100
 Both are but sev'ral synagogues
 Of carnal men, and bears, and dogs :

Both antichristian assemblies,
 To mischief bent far as in them lies :
 Both stave and tail with fierce contests ; 1105

The one with men, the other beasts.
 The difference is, the one fights with
 The tongue, the other with the teeth ;

And that they bait but bears in this,
In th' other, souls and consciences ; 1110

Where Saints themselves are brought to stake,
For gospel-light, and conscience sake;
Expos'd to Scribes and Presbyters,
Instead of mastive dogs and curs,
Than whom th' have less humanity; 1115
For these at souls of men will fly.
This to the prophet did appear,
Who in a vision saw a bear,
Prefiguring the beastly rage
Of Church-rule in this latter age; 1120
As is demonstrated at full
By him that baited the t Pope's Bull.
Bears nat'rally are beasts of prey,
That live by rapine; so do they.
What are their orders, constitutions, 1125
Church-censures, curses, absolutions,
But sev'ral mystic chains they make,
To tie poor Christians to the stake,
And then set heathen officers,
Instead of dogs, about their ears? 1130
For to prohibit and dispense;
To find out or to make offence;
Of Hell and Heaven to dispose;
To play with souls at fast and loose;
To set what characters they please, 1135
And mulcts on sin or godliness;
Reduce the Church to gospel-order,
By rapine, sacrilege, and murder;
To make Presbytery supreme,
And Kings themselves submit to them; 1140
And force all people, though against
Their consciences, to turn Saints;
Must prove a pretty thriving trade,
When Saints monopolists are made;

When pious frauds, and holy shifts, 1145
 Are dispensations and gifts,
 Their godliness becomes mere ware,
 And ev'ry Synod but a fair.
 Synods are whelps of th' Inquisition,
 A mungrel breed of like pernition, 1150
 And growing up, became the sires
 Of scribes, commissioners, and triers;
 Whose bus'ness is, by cunning slight,
 To cast a figure for mens' light;
 To find, in lines of beard and face, 1155
 The physiognomy of grace;
 And by the sound and twang of nose,
 If all be sound within disclose,
 Free from a crack or flaw of sinning,
 As men try pipkins by the ringing; 1160
 By black caps underlaid with white,
 Give certain guess at inward light,
 Which serjeants at the gospel wear,
 To make the spiritual calling clear;
 The handkerchief about the neck 1165
 (Canonical cravat of "SMUCK,
 From whom the institution came,
 When Church and State they set on flame,
 And worn by them as badges then
 Of spiritual warfaring men) 1170
 Judge rightly if regeneration
 Be of the newest cut in fashion.
 Sure' tis an orthodox opinion,
 That grace is founded in dominion.
 Great piety consists in pride; 1175
 To rule is to be sanctified:
To domineer, and to controul,
Both o'er the body and the soul;

PART I. CANTO III.

99

Is the most perfect discipline
 Of church-rule, and by right-divine. 1180
 Bell and the Dragon's chaplains were
 More moderate than these by far :
 For they (poor knaves) were glad to cheat,
 To get their wives and childran meat ;
 But these will not be fobb'd off so ; 1185
 They must have wealth and power too,
 Or else with blood and desolation
 They'll tear it out o' th' heart o' th' nation.
 Sure these themselves from primitive
 And Heathen Priesthood do derive, 1120
 When butchers were the only Clerks,
 Elders and Presbyters of Kirks ;
 Whose directory was to kill ;
 And some believe it is so still.
 The only diff'rence is, that then 1195
 They slaughter'd only beasts, now men.
 For then to sacrifice a bullock,
 Or now and then a child to Moloch,
 They count a vile abomination,
 But not to slaughter a whole nation. 1290
 Presbytery does but translate
 The Papacy to a free state ;
 A commonwealth of Popery,
 Where ev'ry village is a See
 As well as Rome, and must maintain 1205
 A Tithe-pig Metropolitan ;
 Where ev'ry Presbyter and Deacon
 Commands the keys for cheese and bacon ;
 And ev'ry hamlet's governed
 By's Holiness, the Church's Head ; 1210
 More haughty and severe in's place,
 Than GREGORY or BONIFACE.

Such Church must (surely) be a monster
 With many heads: for if we conster
 What in th' Apocalypse we find, 1215
 According to th' Apostle's mind,
 'Tis that the Whore of Babylon
 With many heads did ride upon;
 Which heads denote the sinful tribe
 Of Deacon, Priest, Lay-Elder, Scribe. 1220
 Lay-Elder, SIMEON to LEVI,
 Whose little finger is as heavy
 As loins of patriarchs, prince-prelate,
 And bishop-secular. This zealot
 Is of a mungrel, diverse kind; 1225
 Cleric before, and lay behind;
 A lawless linsie-woolsie brother,
 Half of one order, half another;
 A creature of amphibious nature;
 On land a beast, a fish in water; 1230
 That always preys on grace or sin;
 A sheep without, a wolf within.
 This fierce inquisitor has chief
 Dominion over men's belief
 And manners: can pronounce a Saint 1235
 Idolatrous or ignorant,
 When superciliously he sifts
 Through coarsest boulder others' gifts;
 For all men live and judge amiss,
 Whose talents jump not just with his. 1240
 He'll lay on gifts with hands, and place
 On dullest noddle Light and Grace,
 The manufacture of the Kirk.
 Those pastors are but th' handy-work
 Of his mechanic paws, instilling 1245
 Divinity in them by feeling;

PART I. CANTO III.

101

From whence they start up Chosen Vessels,

Made by contact, as men get meazles.

x So Cardinals, they say, do grope

At th' other end the new-made Pope. 1250

Hold, hold, quoth HUDIBRAS; soft fire,

They say, does make sweet malt. Good Squire,

Festina lente, not too fast;

For haste (the proverb says) makes waste.

The quirks and cavils thou dost make 1255

Are false, and built upon mistake :

And I shall bring you, with your pack

Of fallacies, t' *elenchi* back ;

And put your arguments in mood

And figure to be understood. 1260

I'll force you, by right ratiocination,

To leave your *y* vitiligation,

And make you keep to th' question close,

And argue dialecticos.

The question then, to state it first, 1265

Is, Which is better, or which worst,

Synods or Bears? Bears I avow

To be the worst, and Synods thou.

But, to make good th' assertion,

Thou say'st th' are really all one. 1270

If so, not worst ; for if th' are *idem*

Why then, *tantundem dat tantidem*.

For if they are the same, by course,

Neither is better, neither worse.

But I deny they are the same, 1275

More than a maggot and I am,

That both are *animalia*

I grant, but not *rationalia* :

For though they do agree in kind,

Specific difference we find ; 1280

And can no more make bears of these,
 Than prove my horse is SOCRATES.
 That Synods are bear-gardens too,
 Thou dost affirm; but I say no:
 And thus I prove it in a word; 1285

Whats'ever assembly's not impow'r'd
 To censure, curse, ab'olve, and ordain,
 Can be no Synod: but bear-garden
 Has no such pow'r; ergo, 'tis none:
 And so thy sophistry's o'erthrown. 1290

But yet we are beside the question
 Which thou didst raise the first contest on;
 For that was, Whether Bears are better
 Than Synod-men? I say, *Negatur*.
 That bears are beasts, and synods men, 1295
 Is held by all: they're better then:

For bears and dogs on four legs go,
 As beasts, but Synod-men on two.
 'Tis true, they all have teeth and nails;
 But prove that Synod-men have tails; 1300
 Or that a rugged, shaggy fur

Grows o'er the hide of Presbyter;
 Or that his snout and spacious ears
 Do hold proportion with a bear's.
 A bear's a savage beast, of all 1305

Most ugly and unnatural;
 Whelp'd without form, until the dam
 Has lick'd it into shape and frame:
 But all thy light can ne'er evict,
 That ever Synod-man was lick'd; 1310
 Or brought to any other fashion,
 Than his own will and inclination.

But thou dost further yet in this
Oppugn thyself and sense; that is,

PART. I. CANTO III.

103

Thou would'st have Presbyters to go 1315
 For bears and dogs, and bearwards too ;
 A strange chimera of beasts and men,
 Made up of pieces heterogene ;
 Such as in nature never met
 In *codem subjecto* yet. 1320

Thy other arguments are all
 Supposures, hypothetical,
 That do but beg, and we may chuse
 Either to grant them, or refuse.
 Much thou hast said, which I know when 1325
 And where thou stol'st from other men,
 Whereby 'tis plain thy Light and Gifts
 Are all but plagiary shifts ;
 And is the same that Ranter said,
 Who, arguing with me, broke my head, 1330
 And tore a handful of my beard :
 The self-same cavils then I heard,
 When, b'ing in hot dispute about
 This controversy, we fell out ;
 And what thou know'st I answer'd then, 1335
 Will serve to answer thee agen.

Quoth RALPHO, Nothing but th' abuse
 Of human learning you produce ;
 Learning, that cobweb of the brain,
 Profane, erroneous, and vain ; 1340
 A trade of knowledge, as replete
 As others are with fraud and cheat ;
 An art t'incumber gifts and wit,
 And render both for nothing fit ;
 Makes Light unactive, dull, and troubled, 1345
 Like little DAVID in SAUL's doublet ;
 A cheat that scholars put upon
 Other *meus*' reason and their own ;

A fort of error, to ensconce
 Absurdity and ignorance, 1350
 That renders all the avenues
 To truth impervious and abstruse,
 By making plain things, in debate,
 By art, perplex'd, and intricate :
 For nothing goes for sense or light 1355
 That will not with old rules jump right :
 As if rules were not in the schools
 Deriv'd from truth, but truth from rules.
 This pagan, heathenish invention
 Is good for nothing but contention. 1360
 For as, in sword-and-buckler fight,
 All blows do on the target light ;
 So when men argue, the great'st part
 O' th' contests falls on terms of art,
 Until the fustian stuff be spent, 1365
 And then they fall to th' argument.

Quoth HUDIBRAS, Friend RALPH, thou hast
 Out-run the constable at last ;
 For thou art fallen on a new
 Dispute, as senseless as untrue, 1370
 But to the former opposite
 And contrary as black to white ;
 Mere *z disparata* ; that concerning
 Presbytery ; this, human learning ;
 Two things s'averse, they never yet 1375
 But in thy rambling fancy met.
 But I shall take a fit occasion
 T' evince thee by ratiocination,
 Some other time, in place more proper
 Than this we're in ; therefore let's stop here,
 And rest our weary'd bones a-while, 1381
 Already tir'd with other toil.

NOTES TO PART I. CANTO I.

1 *WHEN* civil a dudgeon, &c.] *Dudgeon*. Who made the alterations in the last Edition of this Poem I know not, but they are certainly sometimes for the worse; and I cannot believe the Author would have changed a word so proper in that place as *dudgeon* is, for that of *fury*, as it is in the last Edition. To take in *dudgeon*, is inwardly to resent some injury or affront; a sort of grumbling in the gizzard, and what is previous to actual fury.

24 ^b *That could as well, &c.*] Bind over to the Sessions, as being a Justice of the Peace in his County, as well as Colonel of a Regiment of Foot in the Parliament's army, and a committee-Man.

38 ^c *As MONTAIGNE, &c.*] *Montaigne*, in his Essays, supposes his cat thought him a fool, for losing his time in playing with her.

62 ^d *To make some, &c.*] Here again is an alteration without any amendment; for the following lines,

*And truly, so he was, perhaps,
Not as a Proselyte, but for Claps,*

Are thus changed,

*And truly so, perhaps, he was;
'Tis many a pious Christian's case.*

The Heathens had an odd opinion, and have a strange reason why *Moses* imposed the law of circumcision on the Jews, which, how untrue soever, I will give the learned reader an account of without translation, as I find it in the annotations upon *Horace*, wrote by my worthy and learned friend Mr. *William Baxter*, the great restorer of the ancient and promoter of modern learning.

Hor. Sat. 9. Sermon. Lib. I.

Curtis; quia pellicula imminuti sunt; quia Moses Rex Judæorum, cujus Legibus reguntur, negligentia Φιμαδις medicinaliter exsectus est, & ne solus esset notabilis, omnes circumcidi valuit. Vet. Schol. Vocem Φιμαδις quæ incititia Librarii exciderat reposuimus ex conjectura, uti & medicinaliter exsectus pro medicinalis effectus quæ nihil erant. Quis miretur ejusmodi convicia homini Epicureo atque Pagano excidisse? Jure igitur Henricó Glareano Diaboli Organum videtur. Etiam Satyra Quinta hæc habet: Constat omnia miracula certa ratione fieri, de quibus Epicurei prudentissime disputant.

66 *c Profoundly skill'd, &c.] Analytick is a part of logic, that teaches to decline and construe reason, as grammar does words.*

93 *f A Babylonish, &c.] A confusion of languages, such as some of our modern Virtuosi used to express themselves in.*

103 *g Or CERBERUS himself, &c.] Cerberus; a name which poets give a dog with three heads, which they feigned door-keeper of Hell, that caressed the unfortunate souls sent thither, and devoured them that would get out again; yet Hercules tied him up, and made him follow. This dog with three heads denotes the past, the present, and the time to come; which receive, and, as it were, devour all things. Hercules got the better of him, which shews that heroic actions are always victorious over time, because they are present in the memory of posterity.*

115 *h That had the, &c.] Demosthenes, who is said to have had a defect in his pronunciation, which he cured by using to speak with little stones in his mouth.*

120 *i Than TYCHO BRAHE, &c.] Tycho Brahe was an eminent Danish mathematician. Quer. in Collier's Dictionary, or elsewhere.*

131 *k Whatever Sceptick, &c.] Sceptick. Pyrrho was the chief of the Sceptick Philosophers, and was at*

first, as *Apollodorus* saith, a painter, then became the hearer of *Drise*, and at last the disciple of *Anaxagoras*, whom he followed into India, to see the *Gymnosophists*. He pretended that men did nothing but by custom; that there was neither honesty nor dishonesty, justice nor injustice, good nor evil. He was very solitary, lived to be ninety years old, was highly esteemed in his country, and created chief priest. He lived in the time of *Epicurus* and *Theophrastus*, about the 120th Olympiad. His followers were called *Phyrrhonians*; besides which they were named the *Ephecticks* and *Aphoreticks*, but more generally *Scepticks*. This sect made their chiefest good to consist in a sedateness of mind, exempt from all passions; in regulating their opinions, and moderating their passions, which they called *Ataxia* and *Metriopathia*; and in suspending their judgment in regard of good and evil, truth or falsehood, which they called *Epechi*. *Sextus Empiricus*, who lived in the second century, under the Emperor *Antoninus Pius*, writ ten books against the mathematicians or astrologers, and three of the *Phyrrhonian* opinion. The word is derived from the Greek *εὐρίσκειν*, quod est, *considerare, speculari*.

145 [He cou'd reduce, &c.] The old philosophers thought to extract notions out of natural things, as chymists do spirits and essences; and, when they had refined them into the nicest subtilties, gave them as insignificant names as those operators do their extractions: But (as *Seneca* says) the subtler things are rendered, they are but the nearer to nothing. So are all their definitions of things by acts the nearer to nonsense.

147 [Where Truth, &c.] Some authors have mistaken truth for a real thing, when it is nothing but a right method of putting those notions or images of things (in the understanding of man) into the same rate and order that their originals hold in nature,

and therefore *Aristotle* says *Unumquodque sicut se habet secundum esse, ita se habet secundum veritatem.* Met. L. ii.

148 ⁿ *Like words congeal'd, &c.]* Some report that in Nova Zembla, and Greenland, mens' words are wont to be frozen in the air, and at the thaw may be heard.

151 *In School-Divinity as able,
As o he that Hight, Irrefragable, &c.]*

Here again is another alteration of three or four lines, as I think, for the worse.

Some specific epithets were added to the title of some famous doctors, as *Angelicus, Irrefragabilis, Subtilis, &c.* Vide *Vossi Etymolog.* *Baillet Jugemens de Scavans, & Possevin's Apparatus*

153 *P A Second THOMAS, or at once,
To name them all, another DUNCE.*

Thomas Aquinas, a Dominican friar, was born in 1224, and studied at Cologne and Paris. He new modelled the school-divinity, and was therefore called the *Angelic Doctor*, and *Eagle of Divines*. The most illustrious persons of his time were ambitious of his friendship, and put a high value on his merits, so that they offered him bishopricks, which he refused with as much ardor as others seek after them. He died in the fiftieth year of his age, and was canonized by Pope John XII. We have his works in eighteen volumes, several times printed.

Johannes Duns Scotus was a very learned man, who lived about the end of the thirteenth and beginning of the fourteenth century. The English and Scotch strive which of them shall have the honour of his birth. The English say, he was born in Northumberland: the Scots alledge he was born at Duns, in the Mers, the neighbouring county to Northum-

land, and hence was called *Dunscotus*. *Moreri*, *Buchanan*, and other Scotch historians, are of this opinion, and for proof cite his epitaph:

*Scotia me genuit; Anglia suscepit,
Gallia edocuit, Germania tenet.*

He died at Cologne, Novem. 8. 1308. In the supplement to Dr. *Cave's Historia Literaria*, he is said to be extraordinary learned in physicks, metaphysicks, mathematicks, and astronomy; that his fame was so great when at Oxford, that 30,000 scholars came thither to hear his lectures: that when at Paris, his arguments and authority carried it for the immaculate conception of the Blessed Virgin; so that they appointed a festival on that account, and would admit no scholars to degrees but such as were of this mind. He was a great opposer of Thomas Aquinas's doctrine; and, for being a very acute logician, was called *Doctor Subtilis*; which was the reason also, that an old punster always called him the *Lathy Doctor*.

158 ¶ *As tough as, &c.*] Sorbon was the first and most considerable college of the university of Paris, founded in the reign of St. Lewis, by Robert Sorbon, which name is sometimes given to the whole University of Paris, which was founded, about the year 741, by Charlemagne, at the persuasion of the learned *Alcuinus*, who was one of the first professors there; since which time it has been very famous. This college has been rebuilt with an extraordinary magnificence, at the charge of Cardinal Richlieu, and contains lodgings for thirty-six doctors, who are called the *Society of Sorbon*. Those which are received among them before they have received their doctor's degree are only said to be of the *Hospitality of Sorbon*. Claud. Hemeraus de Acad. Paris. Spondan. in Annal.

173 ¶ *He knew, &c.*] There is nothing more ridiculous than the various opinions of authors about the seat of Paradise. Sir Walter Raleigh has taken

a great deal of pains to collect them, in the beginning of his *History of the World*; where those, who are unsatisfied, may be fully informed.

180 * *By a High-Dutch, &c.] Goropius Becanus* endeavours to prove that High-Dutch was the language that Adam and Eve spoke in Paradise.

181 † *If either of, &c.]* Adam and Eve being made, and not conceived and formed in the womb, had no navels as some learned men have supposed, because they had no need of them.

182 † *Who first made, &c.]* Musick is said to be invented by *Pythagoras*, who first found out the proportion of notes from the sounds of hammers upon an anvil.

232 † *Like MAHOMET's, &c.] Mahomet* had a tame dove, that used to pick seeds out of his ear, that it might be thought to whisper and inspire him. His ass was so intimate with him, that the *Mahometans* believed it carried him to heaven, and stays there with him to bring him back again.

257 * *It was Monastick, and did grow
In holy Orders by strict Vow.*

He made a vow never to cut his beard until the Parliament had subdued the King; of which order of phanatick votaries there were many in those times.

281 † *So learned TALIACOTIUS, &c.] Taliacotius* was an Italian surgeon, that found out a way to repair lost and decayed noses.

This *Taliacotius* was chief surgeon to the Great Duke of Tuscany, and wrote a treatise, *De Curtis Membris*, which he dedicates to his great master; wherein he not only declares the models of his wonderful operations in restoring of lost members, but gives you cuts of the very instruments and ligatures he made use of therein; from hence our Author (*cum poetica licentia*) has taken his simile.

289 * For as *ÆNEAS*, &c.] *Æneas* was the son of Anchises and Venus; a Trojan, who, after long travels, came to Italy, and after the death of his father-in-law, *Latinus*, was made king of *Latium*, and reigned three years. His story is too long to insert here, and therefore I refer you to *Virgil's Æneids*. Troy being laid in ashes, he took his aged father Anchises upon his back, and rescued him from his enemies. But being too solicitous for his son and household gods, he lost his wife *Creusa*; which Mr. Dryden, in his excellent translation, thus expresseth.

*Haste my dear father, 'tis no time to wait,
And load my shoulders with a willing freight.
Whate'er befalls, your life shall be my care;
One death, or one deliv'rance, we will share.
My hand shall lead our little son; and you,
My faithful consort, shall our steps pursue.*

337 * — For *ARTHUR*, &c.] Who this *Arthur* was, and whether any ever reigned in Britain, has been doubted heretofore, and is by some to this very day. However, the history of him, which makes him one of the nine worthies of the world, is a subject sufficient for the Poet to be pleasant upon.

359 b — *Toledo trusty*, &c.] The capital city of New Castile, in Spain, with an archbishopric and primacy. It was very famous, amongst other things, for tempering the best metal for swords, as *Damascus* was, and perhaps may be still.

389 c *But left the trade, as many more
Have lately done*, &c.

Oliver Cromwell and *Colonel Pride* had been both brewers.

433 d *That CÆSAR's Horse, who, as Fame goes,
Had corns upon his Feet and Toes.*

Julius Cæsar had a horse with feet like a man's.
Utebatur equo insigni; pedibus prope humanis, & in
modum digitorum ungulis fissis. Suet. in *Jul. Cap. 61.*

467 c *The mighty Tyrian Queen, that gain'd*
With subtle Shreds a Tract of Land.

Dido, Queen of *Carthage*, who bought as much land as she could compass with an ox's hide, which she cut into small thongs, and cheated the owner of so much ground as served her to build *Carthage* upon.

476 f *As the bold, &c.]* *Æneas*, whom *Virgil* reports to use a golden bough for a pass to hell; and taylors call that place Hell where they put all they steal.

526 g *As three, &c.]* Read the great Geographical Dictionary, under that word.

530 h *In Magick, &c.]* *Talisman* is a device to destroy any sort of vermin; by casting their images in metal, in a precise minute, when the stars are perfectly inclined to do them all the mischief they can. This has been experienced by some modern *Virtuosi* upon rats, mice, and fleas, and found (as they affirm) to produce the effect with admirable success.

Raymund Lully interprets *cabal*, out of the Arabic, to signify *Scientia superabundans*; which his commentator, *Cornelius Agrippa*, by over-magnifying, has rendered a very superfluous foppery.

532 i *As far as, &c.]* The author of *Magia Adamica* endeavours to prove the learning of the ancient Magi to be derived from that knowledge which God himself taught *Adam* in *Paradise* before the fall.

535 *And much of Terra Incognita,*
The intelligible World cou'd say.

The intelligible world is a kind of *Terra del Fuego*, or *Psittacorum Regio*, &c. discovered only by the philosophers; of which they talk, like parrots, what they do not understand.

538 ^a *As learned, &c.*] No nation in the world is more addicted to this occult philosophy than the Wild-Irish and, as appears by the whole practice of their lives; of which see *Camden* in his description of Ireland.

539 ^l Or *Sir AGRIPPA, &c.*] They who would know more of *Sir Cornelius Agrippa*, here meant, may consult the Great Dictionary.

541 ^m He *ANTHROPOSOPHUS* and *FLOUD*,
And *JACOB BEHMEN* understood.

Antroposophus is only a compound Greek word, which signifies a man that is wise in the knowledge of men, as is used by some anonymous author to conceal his true name.

Dr. Floud was a sort of an English Rosy-crucian, whose works are extant, and as intelligible as those of *Jacob Behmen*.

545 ⁿ In *ROSY-CRUCIAN* Lore as learned,
As he that Vere Adeptus earned.

The fraternity of the Rosy-crucians is very like the sect of the ancient Gnostici, who called themselves so from the excellent learning they pretended to, although they were really the most ridiculous sets of mankind.

Vere Adeptus is one that has commenced in their phanatick extravagance.

646 ^o Thou that with Ale or viler Liquors,
Didst inspire *WITHERS, PRYN, and VICARS.*

This *Vicars* was a man of as great interest and authority in the late Reformation as *Pryn* or *Withers*, and as able a poet. He translated *Virgil's Æneids* into as horrible *Travesty* in earnest, as the French *Scaroon* did in burlesque, and was only outdone in his way by the politic author of *Oceana*.

714 p *We that are, &c.*] This speech is set down as it was delivered by the Knight, in his own words: But since it is below the gravity of Heroical poetry to admit of humour, but all men are obliged to speak wisely alike, and too much of so extravagant a folly would become tedious and impertinent, the rest of his harangues have only his sense expressed in other words, unless in some few places, where his own words could not be so well avoided.

753 q *In bloody, &c.*] *Cynarotomachy* signifies nothing in the world but a fight between dogs and bears; though both the learned and ignorant agree that in such words very great knowledge is contained: And our Knight, as one, or both, of those, was of the same opinion.

758 r *Or Force, &c.*] Another of the same kind, which, though it appear ever so learned and profound, means nothing else but the weeding of corn.

777 s *The Indians fought for the Truth
Of th' Elephant and Monkey's Tooth.*

The History of the White Elephant and the Monkey's Tooth, which the Indians adored, is written by *Mons. le Blanc*. This monkey's tooth was taken by the Portuguese from those that worshipped it; and though they offered a vast ransom for it, yet the Christians were persuaded by their priests rather to burn it. But as soon as the fire was kindled, all the people present were not able to endure the horrible stink that came from it, as if the fire had been made of the same ingredients with which seamen use to compose that kind of granados which they call stinkards.

786 t *The Rage, &c.*] *Boute-feus* is a French word, and therefore it were uncivil to suppose any English person (especially of quality) ignorant of it, or so ill-bred as to need an exposition.

908 u 'Tis sung, &c.] *Mamaluke* is the name of the militia of the Sultans of Egypt. It signified a servant or soldier. They were commonly captives taken from amongst the Christians, and instructed in military discipline, and did not marry. Their power was great; for besides that the Sultans were chosen out of their body, they disposed of the most important offices of the kingdom. They were formidable about 200 years; 'till at last *Selim*, Sultan of the Turks, routed them, and killed their Sultan, near Aleppo, 1516, and so put an end to the empire of Mamalukes, which had lasted 267 years.

No question but the rhyme to Mamaluke was meant Sir *Samuel Luke*, of whom in the preface.

913 w Honour is l... &c.] Our English proverbs are not impertinent to this purpose;

*He that woos a Maid, must seldom come in her sight:
But he that woos a Widow, must woo her Day and Night.
He that woos a Maid, must feign, lye, and flatter:
But he that woos a Widow, must down with his Breeches,
and at her.*

This proverb being somewhat immodest, Mr. Ray says he would not have inserted it in his collection, but that he met with it in, a little book, intitled, the *Quakers' Spiritual Court proclaimed*; written by *Nathaniel Smith*, Student in Physic; wherein the author mentions it as counsel given him by *Hilkiah Bedford*, an eminent Quaker in London, who would have had him to have married a rich widow, in whose house he lodged. In case he could get her, this *Nathaniel Smith* had promised *Hilkiah* a chamber gratis. The whole narrative is worth the reading.

NOTES TO PART I. CANTO II.

47 * *That is to say, whether Tollutation,
As they do term't, or Succussation.*

Tollutation and *Succussation* are only Latin words for ambling and trotting; though I believe both were natural amongst the old Romans; since I never read they made use of the *frammel*, or any other art, to pace their horses.

60 y *As Indian Britons, &c.]* The American Indians call a great bird they have, with a white head, a penguin, which signifies the same thing in the British tongue: from whence (with other words of the same kind) some authors have endeavoured to prove, that the Americans are originally derived from the Britons.

65 z *The dire, &c.]* Pharsalia is a city of Thessaly, famous for the battle won by *Julius Cæsar* against *Pompey the Great*, in the neighbouring plains, in the 607th year of Rome, of which read *Lucan's Pharsalia*.

129 * *Chiron, the &c.]* *Chiron*, a Centaur, son to *Saturn* and *Phillyris*, living in the mountains, where, being much given to hunting, he became very knowing in the virtues of plants, and one of the most famous physicians of his time. He imparted his skill to *Æsculapius*, and was afterwards *Apollo's* governor, until being wounded by *Hercules*, and desiring to die, *Jupiter* placed him in heaven, where he forms the sign of *Sagittarius* or the Archer.

133 b *In Staffordshire, where virtuous Worth
Does raise the Minstrelsy, not Birth, &c.*

The whole history of this ancient ceremony you may read at large in *Dr. Plot's History of Staffordshire*, under the town *Tutbury*.

155 *c Grave as, &c.*] For the history of Pega, read *Mandelsa* and *Olearius's Travels*.

172 *In military, &c.*] Paris Garden, in Southwark, took its name from the possessor.

231 *Though by, &c.*] Promethean fire. Prometheus was the son of Iapetus, and brother of Atlas, concerning whom the poets have feigned, that having first formed men of the earth and water, he stole fire from heaven to put life into them; and that having thereby displeased Jupiter, he commanded Vulcan to tie him to mount Caucasus with iron chains, and that a vulture should prey upon his liver continually: but the truth of the story is, that Prometheus was an astrologer, and constant in observing the stars upon that mountain; and that, among other things, he found the art of making fire, either by the means of a flint, or by contracting the sun-beams in a glass. *Bochart* will have *Magog*, in the Scripture, to be the Prometheus of the Pagans.

He here and before sarcastically derides those who were great admirers of the sympathetic powder and weapon salve, which were in great repute in those days, and much promoted by the great *Sir Kenelm Digby*, who wrote a treatise *ex professo* on that subject, and, I believe, thought what he wrote to be true, which since has been almost exploded out of the world.

267 *And 'mong, &c.*] Cossacks are a people that live near Poland. This name was given them for their extraordinary nimbleness; for *cosa*, or *kosa*, in the Polish tongue, signifies a goat. He that would know more of them, may read *Le Laboureur* and *Thuldenus*.

275 *And tho', &c.*] This custom of the Huns is described by *Ammianus Marcellinus*, *Hunni semicruda cujusvis Pecoris corne vescuntur, quam inter femora sua & equorum terga subsertam, calefacient brevi*. P. 686.

283—*He spous'd in India,
Of noble House, a Lady gay.*

The Story in *Le Blanc*, of a bear that married a king's daughter, is no more strange than many others, in most travellers, that pass with allowance; for if they should write nothing but what is possible, or probable, they might appear to have lost their labour, and observed nothing but what they might have done as well at home.

343 *In MAGIC he was deeply read,
As he that made the Brazen-Head;
A Profoundly skill'd in the Black Art;
As ENGLISH MERLIN for his Heart.*

Roger Bacon and Merlin. See Collier's Dictionary.

368 ^d *As JOAN, &c.]* Two notorious women; the last was known here by the name of *Mull Cutpurse*.

378 ^e *Than the Amazonian, &c.]* *Penthesile*, Queen of the Amazons, succeeded Orythia. She carried succours to the Trojans, and after having given noble proofs of her bravery, was killed by Achilles. Pliny saith, it was she that invented the battle-ax. If any one desire to know more of the Amazons, let him read Mr. Sanson.

385 ^f *They wou'd not suffer the stout'st Dame
To swear by HERCULES's Name.*

The old Romans had particular oaths for men and women to swear by; and therefore *Macrobius* says, *Viri per Castorem non jurabant antiquitus, nec Mulieres per Herculem; Edepol autem juramentum erat tum mulieribus, quam viris commune, &c.*

393 ^g *As stout, &c.]* Two formidable women at arms, in romances, that were cudgelled into love by their gallants.

395 ^h *Of GUNDIBERT, &c.]* *Gundibert* is a feigned name, made use of by Sir William W. Arcenaut in his famous epic poem, so called; wherein you may find

also that of his mistress. This poem was designed by the author to be an imitation of the English Drama: it being divided into five books, as the other is into five acts; the Cantos to be parallel of the scenes, with this difference, that this is delivered narratively, the other dialogues. It was ushered into the world by a large preface, written by Mr. Hobbes, and by the pens of two of our best poets, viz. Mr. Waller and Mr. Cowley, which one would have thought might have proved a sufficient defence and protection against snarling critics. Notwithstanding which, four eminent wits of that age (two of which were Sir John Denham and Mr. Donne) published several copies of verses to Sir William's discredit, under this title, *Certain Verses written by several of the Author's Friends, to be reprinted with the second Edition of Gundibert in 8vo. Lond. 1653.* These verses were as wittily answered by the author, under this title, *The incomparable Poem of Gundibert vindicated from the Wit Combat of four Esquires, Clinias, Damætas, Sancho, and Jack-Pudding; printed in 8vo. Lond. 1665.* Vide Langbain's *Account of Dramatic Poets.*

496 ^l What OEstrum, &c.] OEstrum is not only a Greek word for madness, but signifies also a gad-bee or horse-fly, that torments cattle in the summer, and makes them run about as if they were mad.

525 ^k Wore in their Hats, &c.] Some few days after the King had accus'd the five Members of Treason in the House of Commons, great crowds of the rabble came down to Westminster-Hall, with printed copies of the Protestation tied in their hats, like favours.

526 ^l When 'twas resolv'd by either House
Six Members Quarrel to espouse.

The six Members were the Lord Kimbolton, Mr. Pym, Mr. Hollis, Mr. Hampden, Sir Arthur Haslerig, and Mr. Stroud, whom the king ordered to be ap-

prehended, and their papers seized ; charging them of plotting with the Scots, and favouring the late tumults ; but the House voted against the arrest of their persons or papers ; whereupon the King having preferred articles against those Members, he went with his guard to the House to demand them ; but they, having notice, withdrew.

578 ^m *Make that, &c.*] Abusive or insulting had been better ; but our Knight believed the learned language more convenient to understand in than his own Mother-tongue.

650 ⁿ *And is indeed the self same Case
With theirs that swore t^e Et cæteras.*

The Convocation, in one of the short Parliaments, that uslied in the long one, (as dwarfs are wont to do knights-errant,) made an oath to be taken by the clergy for observing canonical obedience ; in which they enjoined their brethren, out of the abundance of their consciences, to swear to articles with, &c.

652 ^o *Or the French League, in which men vow'd
To fight to the last Drop of Blood.*

The Holy League in France, designed and made for the extirpation of the Protestant Religion, was the original, out of which the *Solemn League and Covenant* here was (with the difference only of circumstances) most faithfully transcribed. Nor did the success of both differ more than the intent and purpose ; for after the destruction of vast numbers of people of all sorts, both ended with the murder of two Kings, whom they had both sworn to defend : And as our Covenanters swore every man to run one before another in the way of Reformation, so did *the French*, in the Holy League, to fight to the last drop of blood.

NOTES TO PART I. CANTO III.

134 p First TRULLA stav'd, &c.] *Staving* and *Tailing* are terms of art used in the Bear-Garden, and signify there only the parting of dogs and bears: Though they are used metaphorically in several other professions, for moderating; as law, divinity, hectoring, &c.

153 q Or like the late corrected leathern
Ears of the Circumcised Brethren.

Pryn, *Bastwick*, and *Burton*, who laid down their ears as proxies for their profession of the godly party, not long after maintained their right and title to the pillory to be as good and lawful as theirs who first of all took possession of it in their names.

328 r That old, &c.] *Pygmalion*, king of Tyre, was the son of *Margenus*, or *Mechres*, whom he succeeded, and lived 56 years, whereof he reigned 47. *Dido*, his sister, was to have governed with him, but it was pretended the subjects thought not convenient. She married *Sichæus*, who was the king's uncle, and very rich; wherefore he put him to death; and *Dido* soon after departed the kingdom. Poets say, *Pygmalion* was punished for the hatred he bore to women with the love he had to a statue.

925 s And as the FRENCH we conquer'd once,
Now give us Laws for PANTALOONS, &c.

Pantaloons and *Port-Cannons* were some of the fantastick fashions wherein we aped the French.

*At quisquis Insula satus Britannica
Sic patria insolens fastidiet suam,
Ut more sinuæ laboret fingere,
Et æmulari Gallicas ineptias,
Et omni Gallo ego hunc opinor ebrium;
Ergo ex Britanno, ut Gallus esse nititur,
Sic Dii jubete, fiat ex Gallo Capus.*

THOMAS MORE

Gallus is a river in Phrygia, rising out of the mountains of Celenæ, and discharging itself into the river Sanger, the water of which is of that admirable quality, that, being moderately drank, it purges the brain, and cures madness; but largely drank, it makes men trantick. *Pliny, Horatius.*

1123 † A learned divine in King *James's* time wrote a polemick work against the Pope, and gave it that unlucky nick-name of *The Pope's Bull baited*.

1156 ^u *Canonical Cravat, &c.*] *Smectymnus* was a club of five parliamentary holders-forth; the characters of whose names and talents were by themselves expressed in that senseless and insignificant word. They wore handkerchiefs about their necks for a mark of distinction (as the Officers of the Parliament Army then did) which afterwards degenerated into carnal cravats. About the beginning of the long Parliament, in the year 1641, these five wrote a book against Episcopacy and the Common Prayer, to which they all subscribed their names; being *Stephen Marshal, Edmund Calamy, Thomas Young, Matthew Newcomen, and William Spurstow*, and from thence they and their followers were called *Smectymnians*. They are remarkable for another pious book, which they wrote some time after that, intitled, *The Kings Cabinet unlocked*, wherein all the chaste and endearing expressions, in the letters that passed betwixt his Majesty King *Charles I.* and his Royal Consort, are by these painful labourers in the Devil's vineyard turned into burlesque and ridicule. Their books were answered with as much calmness and genteelness of expression, and as much learning and honesty, by the Rev. Mr. *Symonds*, then a deprived clergyman, as their's was stuffed with malice, spleen, and rascally invectives.

1249 * *So Cardinals they say do grope*
At t'other end the new-made Pope.

This relates to the story of Pope Joan, who was called John VIII. *Platina* saith she was of English extraction, but born at Mentz; who, having disguised herself like a man, travelled with her paramour to Athens, where she made such progress in learning, that coming to Rome, she met with few that could equal her; so that, on the death of Pope Leo IV. she was chosen to succeed him; but being got with child by one of her domesticks, her travail came upon her between the Colossian Theatre and St. Clement's, as she was going to the Lateran Church, and died upon the place, having sat two years, one month, and four days, and was buried there without any pomp. He owns that; for the shame of this, the Popes decline going through this street to the Lateran; and that, to avoid the like error, when any Pope is placed in the Porphyry Chair, his genitals are felt by the youngest deacon, through a hole made for that purpose; but he supposes the reason of that to be, to put him in mind that he is a man, and obnoxious to the necessities of nature; whence he will have the seat to be called, *Sedes Stercoraria*.

1262 *To leave your y Vitiligation, &c.*

Vitiligation is a word the Knight was passionately in love with, and never failed to use it upon all occasions; and therefore to omit it, when it fell in the way, had argued too great a neglect of his learning and parts; though it means no more than a preverse humour of wrangling.

1373 z *Mere Disparata, &c.*] Disparata are things separate and unlike, from the Latin word *Disparo*.

HUDIBRAS.

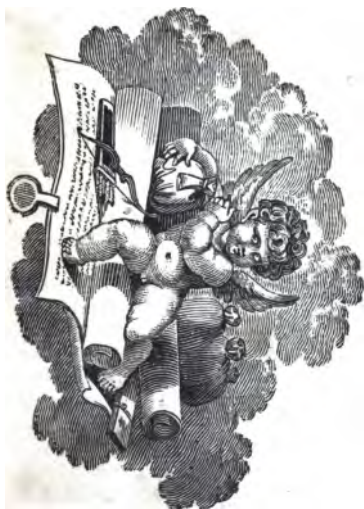
PART II.

CANTO I.

THE ARGUMENT.

The Knight by damnable Magician,
Being cast illegally in Prison,
Love brings his Action on the Case,
And lays it upon Hudibras.
How he receives the Lady's Visit,
And cunningly solicits his Suite,
Which she defers; yet on Parole
Redeems him from th' enchanted Hole.

BUT now, t'observe a romantic method,
Let bloody steel a while be sheathed,
And all those harsh and rugged sounds
Of bastinadoes, cuts, and wounds,
Exchang'd to Love's more gentle stile, 5
To let our reader breathe a while;
In which, that we may be as brief as
Is possible, by way of preface,
Is't not enough to make one strange,
That some men's fancies should ne'er change, 10
But make all people do and say
The same things still the self-same way?





PART II. CANTO I.

125

Some writers make all ladies purloin'd,
And knights pursuing like a whirlwind;
Others make all their knights, in fits 15
Of jealousy, to lose their wits;
Till dragging blood o' th' dames, like witches,
Th' are forthwith cur'd of their caprices. *
Some always thrive in their amours,
By pulling plaisters off their sores; 20
As cripples do to get an alms,
Just so do they, and win their dames.
Some force whole regions, in despoil
O' geography, to change their site;
Make former times shake hands with latter, 25
And that which was before, come after.
But those that write in rhyme, still make
The one verse for the other's sake;
For, one for sense, and one for rhyme,
I think's sufficient at one time. 30

But we forget in what sad plight
We whilom left the captiv'd Knight
And pensive Squire, both bruise'd in body,
And conjur'd into safe custody.
Tir'd with dispute and speaking Latin, 35
As well as hasting, and bear-baiting,
And desperate of any course,
To free himself by wit or force,
His only solace was, that now
His dog-bolt fortune was so low, 40
That either it must quickly end,
Or turn about again, and mend;
In which he found th' event, no less
Than other times, beside his guess.

*There is a tall long-sided dame,
(But wond'rous light,) ycleped Fame,*

That, like a thin camelion, boards
 Herself on air, and eats her words ;
 Upon her shoulders wings she wears
 Like hanging-sleeves, lin'd through with ears, 50
 And eyes, and tongues, as poets list,
 Made good by deep mythologist.
 With these she through the welkin flies,
 And sometimes carries truth, oft lies ;
 With letters hung like eastern pigeons, 55
 And Mercuries of furthest regions ;
 Diurnals writ for regulation
 Of lying, to inform the nation ;
 And by their public use to bring down
 The rate of whetstones in the kingdom. 60
 About her neck a pacquet-male,
 Fraught with advice, some fresh, some stale,
 Of men that walk'd when they were dead,
 And cows of monsters brought to bed ;
 Of hail-stones big as pullets eggs, 65
 And puppies whelp'd with twice two legs ;
 A blazing star seen in the west,
 By six or seven men at least.
 Two trumpets she does sound at once,
 But both of clean contrary tones ; 70
 But whether both with the same wind,
 Or one before, and one behind,
 We know not ; only this can tell,
 The one sounds vilely, th' other well ;
 And therefore vulgar authors name 75
 Th' one Good, the other Evil, Fame.

This tattling gossip knew too well
 What mischief HUDIBRAS befell,
And straight the spiteful tidings bears
Of all to th' unkind widow's ears. 80

PART II. CANTO I.

127

DEMOCRITUS ne'er laugh'd so loud
 To see bawds carted through the crowd,
 Or funerals with stately pomp
 March slowly on in solemu dump,
 As she laugh'd out, until her back, 85
 As well as sides, was like to crack.
 She vow'd she would go see the sight,
 And visit the distressed Knight;
 To do the office of a neighbour,
 And be a gossip at his labour; 90
 And from his wooden jail, the stocks,
 To set at large his fetter-locks;
 And, by exchange, parole, or ransom,
 To free him from th' enchanted mansion.
 This b'ing resolv'd, she call'd for hood 95
 And usher, implements abroad
 Which ladies wear, beside a slender
 Young waiting damsel to attend her;
 All which appearing, on she went,
 To find the Knight in limbo pent. 100
 And 'twas not long before she found
 Him, and the stout Squire, in the pound;
 Both coupled in enchanted tether,
 By further leg behind together:
 For as he sat upon his rump, 105
 His head like one in doleful dump,
 Between his knees, his hands apply'd
 Unto his ears on either side;
 And by him, in another hole,
 Afflicted **RALPHO**, cheek by jowl; 110
 She came upon him in his wooden
 Magician's circle on the sudden,
 As spirits do t' a conjurer,
 When in their dreadful shapes th' appear.

HUDIBRAS.

No sooner did the Knight perceive her, 115
 At straight he fell into a fever,
 Lam'd all over with disgrace,
 He seen by her in such a place;
 Which made him hang his head, and scowl,
 And wink, and goggle like an owl. 120
 He felt his brains begin to swim,
 When thus the dame accosted him:
 This place (quoth she) they say's enchanted,
 And with delinquent spirits haunted,
 At here are ty'd in chains, and scourg'd, 125
 Till their guilty crimes be purg'd.
 Look, there are two of them appear,
 The persons I have seen somewhere.
 We have mistaken blocks and posts
 For spectres, apparitions, ghosts, 130
 With saucer-eyes, and horns; and some
 Have heard the Devil beat a drum:
 But if our eyes are not false glasses,
 They at give a wrong account of faces,
 That beard and I should be acquainted, 135
 Before 'twas conjur'd or enchanted;
 Though it be disfigur'd somewhat,
 If 't had lately been in combat,
 It did belong to a worthy Knight,
 We'er this goblin has come by't. 140
 When HUDIBRAS the Lady heard
 Discoursing thus upon his beard,
 And speak with such respect and honour,
 Of the beard and the beard's owner,
 He thought it best to set as good 145
 A face upon it as he cou'd,
*Thus he spoke: Lady, your bright
 Radiant eyes are in the right:*

PART II. CANTO I.

129

The beard's th' identic beard you knew,
The same numerically true : 150
Nor is it worn by fiend or elf,
But its proprietor himself.

O, heavens ! quoth she, can that be true ?
I do begin to fear 'tis you :
Not by your individual whiskers, 155
But by your dialect and discourse,
That never spoke to man or beast
In notions vulgarly exprest.

But what malignant star, alas !
Has brought you both to this sad pass ? 160

Quoth he, The fortune of the war,
Which I am less afflicted for,
Than to be seen with beard and face,
By you in such a homely case.

Quoth she, Those need not be asham'd 165
For being honorably main'd,
If he that is in battle conquer'd,
Have any title to his own beard ;
Though yours be sorely lugg'd and torn,
It does your visage more adorn 170
Than if 'twere prun'd, and starch'd, and lander'd,
And cut square by the Russian standard.

A torn beard's like a tatter'd ensign,
That's bravest which there are most rents in.
That petticoat about your shoulders 175

Does not so well become a souldier's ;
And I'm afraid they are worse handled,
Although i' th' rear ; your beard tho van led ;
And those uneasy bruises make
My heart for company to ake, 180
To see so worshipful a friend
I' th' pillory set, at the wrong end.

Quoth HUDIBRAS, This thing call'd pain
 Is (as the learned Stoicks maintain)
 Not bad simpliciter, nor good, 185
 But merely as 'tis understood.
 Sense is deceitful, and may feign,
 As well in counterfeiting pain
 As other gross phenomenas,
 In which it oft mistakes the case. 190
 But since the immortal intellect
 (That's free from error and defect,
 Whose objects still persist the same)
 Is free from outward bruise and maim,
 Which nought external can expose 195
 To gross material bangs or blows,
 It follows, we can ne'er be sure,
 Whether we pain or not endure ;
 And just so far are sore and griev'd,
 As by the fancy is believ'd. 200
 Some have been wounded with conceit,
 And dy'd of mere opinion straight ;
 Others, tho' wounded sore in reason,
 Felt no contusion, nor discretion.
 A Saxon ^b Duke did grow so fat, 205
 That mice (as histories relate)
 Eat grots and labyrinths to dwell in
 His postick parts without his feeling :
 Then how is't possible a kick
 Should e'er reach that way to the quick ? 210
 Quoth she, I grant it is in vain
 For one that's basted to feel pain,
 Because the pangs his bones endure
 Contribute nothing to the cure :
 Yet honor hurt, is wont to rage 215
 With pain no med'cine can assuage.

PART II. CANTO I.

131

Quoth he, That honour's very squeamish
That takes a basting for a blemish ;
For what's more hon'rab'le than scars,
Or skin to tatters rent in wars ? 220
Some have been beaten till they know
What wood a cudgel's of by th' blow ;
Some kick'd until they can feel whether
A shoe be Spanish or neat's leather ;
And yet have met, after long running, 225
With some whom they have taught that cunning.
The furthest way about t' o'ercome,
In the end does prove the nearest home.
By laws of learned duellists,
They that are bruised with wood or fists, 230
And think one beating may for once
Suffice, are cowards and pultroons :
But if they dare engage t' a second,
They're stout and gallant fellows reckon'd.
Th' old Romans freedom did bestow, 235
Our princes worship, with a blow.
King PYRRHUS cur'd his spleenetic
And testy courtiers with a kick.
The NEROUS, when some mighty lord
Or potentate's to be restor'd 240
And pardon'd for some great offence,
With which he's willing to dispense,
First has him laid upon his belly,
Then beaten back and side to a jelly ;
That done, he rises, humbly bows, 245
And gives thanks for the princely blows ;
Departs not meanly proud, and boasting
Of this magnificent rib-roasting.
The beaten soldier proves most manful,
That, like his sword, endures the anvil, 250

And justly's held more formidable,
 The more his valour's malleable :
 But he that fears a bastinado
 Will run away from his own shadow :
 And though I'm now in durance fast, 255
 By our own party basely cast,
 Ransom, exchange, parole refus'd,
 And worse than by the enemy us'd ;
 In close & catasta shut, past hope
 Of wit or valour to elope ; 260
 As beards the nearer that they tend
 To th' earth still grow more reverend ;
 And cannons shoot the higher pitches,
 The lower we let down their breeches ;
 I'll make this low dejected fate 265
 Advance me to a greater height.

Quoth she, Y' have almost made me in love
 With that which did my pity move.
 Great wits and valours, like great states,
 Do sometimes sink with their own weights : 270
 Th' extremes of glory and of shame,
 Like East and West, become the same :
 No Indian Prince has to his palace
 More foll'wers than a thief to th' gallows,
 But if a beating seem so brave, 275
 What glories must a whipping have !
 Such great atchievements cannot fail
 To cast salt on a woman's tail :
 For if I thought your nat'ral talent
 Of passive courage were so gallant, 280
 As you strain hard to have it thought,
 I could grow amorous, and dote.

When HUDIBRAS this language heard,
 He prick'd up's ears and strok'd his beard ;

PART II. CANTO I.

133

Thought he, this is the lucky hour ; 285
Wines work when vines are in the flow'r ;
This crisis then I'll set my rest on,
And put her boldly to the question.

Madam, what you wou'd seem to doubt,
Shall be to all the world made out, 290
How I've been drubb'd, and with what spirit
And magnanimity I bear it ;
And if you doubt it to be true,
I'll stake myself down against you :
And if I fail in love or troth, 295
Be you the winner, and take both.

Quoth she, I've heard old cunning stagers
Say, fools for arguments use wagers ;
And though I prais'd your valour, yet
I did not mean to baulk your wit ; 300
Which, if you have, you must needs know
What I have told you before now,
And you b' experiment have prov'd,
I cannot love where I'm belov'd.

Quoth HUDIBRAS, 'tis a caprich 305
Beyond th' infliction of a witch ;
So cheats to play with those still aim
That do not understand the game.
Love in your heart as idly burns
As fire in antique Roman urns, 310
To warm the dead, and vainly light
Those only that see nothing by't.
Have you not power to entertain,
And render love for love again ;
As no man can draw in his breath 315
At once, and force out air beneath ?
Or do you love yourself so much,
To bear all rivals else a grutch ?

What fate can lay a greater curse
 Than you upon yourself would force? 320
 For wedlock without love, some say,
 Is but a lock without a key.

It is a kind of rape to marry
 One that neglects, or cares not for ye :
 For what does make it ravishment, 325
 But b'ing against the mind's consent ?

A rape that is the more inhuman
 For being acted by a woman.

Why are you fair, but to entice us
 To love you, that you may despise us? 330

But though you cannot love, you say,
 Out of your own fanatick way,
 Why should you not at least allow
 Those that love you to do so too ?

For, as you fly me, and pursue 335
 Love more averse, so I do you ;

And am by your own doctrine taught
 To practise what you call a fau't.

Quoth she, If what you say is true,
 You must fly me as I do you ; 340

But 'tis not what we do, but say,
 In love and preaching, that must sway.

Quoth he, To bid me not to love,
 Is to forbid my pulse to move,

My beard to grow, my ears to prick up, 345
 Or (when I'm in a fit) to hickup :

Command me to piss out the moon,
 And 'twill as easily be done.

Love's power's too great to be withstood
 By feeble human flesh and blood. 350

'Twas he that brought upon his knees
 The hec'ring, kill-cow **Hercules** ;

PART II. CANTO I.

135.

Transform'd his leager-lion's skin
 T' a petticoat, and made him spin ;
 Seiz'd on his club, and made it dwindle 355
 T' a feeble distaff, and a spindle.
 'Twas he that made emperors gallants
 To their own sisters and their aunts ;
 Set popes and cardinals agog,
 To play with pages at leap-frog. 360
 'Twas he that gave our Senate purges,
 And flux'd the House of many a burgess ;
 Made those that represent the nation
 Submit, and suffer amputation ;
 And all the Grandees o' the Cabal 365
 Adjourn to tubs at Spring and Fall.
 He mounted Synod-Men, and rode 'em
 To Dirty-Lane and Little Sodom ;
 Made 'em curvet like Spanish jenets,
 And take the ring at Madam — 370
 'Twas he that made a Saint FRANCIS do
 More than the Devil could tempt him to,
 In cold and frosty weather, grow
 Enamour'd of a wife of snow ;
 And though she were of rigid temper, 375
 With melting flames accost and tempt her ;
 Which after in enjoyment quenching,
 He hung a garland on his engine
 Quoth she, If Love have these effects,
 Why is it not forbid our sex ? 380
 Why is't not damn'd and interdicted,
 For diabolical and wicked ?
 And sung, as out of tune, against,
 As Turk and Pope are by the Saints ?
 I find I've greater reason for it, 385
 Than I believ'd before t' abhor it,

Quoth HUDIBRAS, These sad effects
 Spring from your Heathenish neglects
 Of Love's great pow'r, which he returns
 Upon yourselves with equal scorns;
 And those who worthy lovers slight,
 Plagues with prepost'rous appetite.
 This made the beauteous ^f Queen of Crete
 To take a town-bull for her sweet,
 And from her greatness stoop so low,
 To be the rival of a cow:
 Others to prostitute their great hearts,
 To be baboons' and monkeys' sweet-hearts;
 Some with the Dev'l himself in league grow,
 By's representative a Negro.

'Twas this made vestal-maids love-sick,
 And venture to be bury'd quick:
 Some by their fathers, and their brothers,
 To be made mistresses and mothers.

'Tis this that proudest dames enamours
 On lacquies and valets des chambres;
 Their haughty stomachs overcomes,
 And makes 'em stoop to dirty grooms;
 To slight the world, and to disparage
 Claps, issue, infamy, and marriage.

Quoth she, These judgments are severe,
 Yet such as I should rather bear,
 Than trust men with their oaths, or prove
 Their faith and secresy in love.

Says he, There is as weighty reason
 For secresy in love as treason.
 Love is a burglarer, a felon,
 That at the windore-eyes does steal in
To rob the heart, and with his prey
Steals out again a closer way,

PART. II. CANTO I.

137

Which whosoever can discover,
 He's sure (as he deserves) to suffer.
 Love is a fire, that burns and sparkles
 In men as nat'rally as in charcoals,
 Which sooty chymists stop in holes 425
 When out of wood they extract coals :
 So lovers should their passions choak,
 That, tho' they burn, they may not smoak.
 'Tis like that sturdy thief that stole
 And dragg'd beasts backwards into's hole : 430
 So Love does lovers, and us men
 Draws by the tails into his den,
 That no impression may discover,
 And trace t' his cave, the wary lover.
 But if you doubt I should reveal 435
 What you entrust me under seal,
 I'll prove myself as close and virtuous
 As your own secretary's ALBERTUS.

Quoth she, I grant you may be close
 In hiding what your aims propose. 440
 Love-passions are like parables,
 By which men still mean something else.
 Though love be all the world's pretence,
 Money's the mythologick sense ;
 The real substance of the shadow, 445
 Which all address and courtship's made to.

Thought he, I understand your play,
 And how to quit you your own way :
 He that will win his dame, must do
 As Love does when he bends his bow ; 450
 With one hand thrust the lady from,
 And with the other pull her home.
 I grant, quoth he, wealth is a great
 Provocative to am'rous heat.

It is all philters, and high diet, 455
 That makes love rampant, and to fly out :
 'Tis beauty always in the flower,
 That buds and blossoms at fourscore :
 'Tis that by which the sun and moon
 At their own weapons are out-done : 460
 That makes Knights-Errant fall in trances,
 And lay about 'em in romances :
 'Tis virtue, wit, and worth, and all
 That men divine and sacred call :
 For what is worth in any thing, 465
 But so much money as 'twill bring ?
 Or what, but riches is there known,
 Which man can solely call his own ;
 In which no creature goes his half,
 Unless it be to ^h squint and laugh ? 470
 I do confess, with goods and land,
 I'd have a wife at second-hand ;
 And such you are. Nor is 't your person
 My stomach's set so sharp and fierce on ;
 But 'tis (your better part) your riches, 475
 That my enamour'd heart bewitches.
 Let me your fortune but possess,
 And settle your person how you please :
 Or make it o'er in trust to th' Devil ;
 You'll find me reasonable and civil. 480

Quoth she, I like this plainness better
 Than false mock-passion, speech, or letter,
 Or any feat of qualm or sowning,
 But hanging of yourself, or drowning.
 Your only way with me to break 485
 Your mind, is breaking of your neck ;
*For as when merchants break, o'erthrown
 Like nine-pins, they strike others down,*

PART II. CANTO. I.

139

So that would break my heart, which done,
 My tempting fortune is your own. 490
 These are but trifles: ev'ry lover
 Will damn himself over and over,
 And greater matters undertake
 For a less worthy mistress' sake:
 Yet th' are the only ways to prove 495
 Th' unfeign'd realities of love:
 For he that hangs, or beats out's brains,
 The Devil's in him if he feigns.

Quoth HUDIBRAS, This way's too rough
 For mere experiment and proof: 500
 It is no jesting, trivial matter,
 To swing i' th' air, or dounce in water,
 And, like a water-witch, try love;
 That's to destroy, and not to prove;
 As if a man should be dissected 505
 To find what part is disaffected,
 Your better way is to make over,
 In trust, your fortune to your lover.
 Trust is a trial; if it break,
 'Tis not so desp'rate as a neck, 510
 Beside, th' experiment's more certain;
 Men venture necks to gain a fortune;
 The soldier does it ev'ry day
 (Eight to the week) for six-pence pay:
 Your pettifoggers damn their souls, 515
 To share with knaves in cheating fools:
 And merchants, vent'ring through the main,
 Slight pirates, rocks, and horns, for gain.
 This is the way I advise you to:
 Trust me, and see what I will do. 520

Quoth she, *I should be loth to run
 Myself all th' hazard, and you none;*

Which must be done, unless some deed
Of your's aforesaid do precede.

Give but yourself one gentle swing

525

For trial, and I'll cut the string :

Or give that rev'rend head a maul,

Or two, or three, against a wall,

To shew you are a man of mettle,

And I'll engage myself to settle.

530

Quoth he, My head's not made of brass,

As Friar ⁱ Bacon's noddle was ;

Nor (like the ^k Indian's skull) so tough

That, authors say, 'twas musket-proof,

As yet on any new adventure,

535

As it had need to be, to enter.

You see what bangs it has endur'd,

That would, before new feats, be cur'd.

But if that's all you stand upon,

Here, strike me luck, it shall be done.

540

Quoth she, The matter's not so far gone

As you suppose : Two words t' a bargain :

That may be done, and time enough,

When you have given downright proof ;

And yet 'tis no fantastic pique

545

I have to love, nor coy dislike :

'Tis no implicit, nice aversion

T' your conversation, mein, or person,

But a just fear, lest you should prove

False and perfidious in love :

550

For if I thought you could be true,

I could love twice as much as you.

Quoth he, My faith as adamantine,

As chains of destiny, I'll maintain :

True as APOLLO ever spoke,

555

Or ⁱ Oracle from heart of oak ;

PART II. CANTO I.

141

And if you'll give my flame but vent,
Now in close hugger-mugger pent,
And shine upon me but benignly,
With that one, and that other pigsney, 560
The sun and day shall sooner part,
Than love or you shake off my heart ;
The sun, that shall no more dispense
His own but pour bright influence.

I'll carve your name on barks of trees, 565
With true-loves-knots and flourishes,
That shall infuse eternal spring,
And everlasting flourishing :

Drink ev'ry letter on't in stum,
And make it brisk champaign become : 570
Where-e'er you tread, your foot shall set
The primrose and the violet :

All spices, perfumes, and sweet powders,
Shall borrow from your breath their odours :
Nature her charter shall renew, 575

And take all lives of things from you ;
The world depend upon your eye,
And when you frown upon it, die :
Only our loves shall still survive,
New worlds and natures to out-live : 580

And, like to heralds' moons, remain
All crescents, without change or wane.

Hold, hold, quoth she ; no more of this,
Sir Knight ; you take your aim amiss :
For you will find it a hard chapter 585

To catch me with poetic rapture,
In which your mastery of art
Doth shew itself, and not your heart :
Nor will you raise in mine combustion
By dint of high heroic fustian. 590

She that with poetry is won,
 Is but a desk to write upon ;
 And what men say of her, they mean
 No more than on the thing they lean.
 Some with Arabian spices strive 595
 T' embalm her cruelly alive ;
 Or season her, as French cooks use
 Their haut-gousts, bouillies, or ragousts :
 Use her so barbarously ill,
 To grind her lips upon a mill, 600
 Until the facet doublet doth
 Fit their rhimes rather than her mouth :
 Her mouth compar'd to an oyster's, with
 A row of pearl in't—stead of teeth.
 Others make posies of her cheeks, 605
 Where red and whitest colours mix ;
 In which the lily, and the rose,
 For Indian lake and ceruse goes.
 The sun and moon by her bright eyes
 Eclips'd, and darken'd in the skies, 610
 Are but black patches, that she wears,
 Cut into suns, and moons, and stars :
 By which astrologers as well,
 As those in Heav'n above, can tell
 What strange events they do foreshow 615
 Unto her under-world below.
 Her voice, the music of the spheres,
 So loud, it deafens mortals ears ;
 As wise philosophers have thought ;
 And that's the cause we hear it not. 620
 This has been done by some, who those
 Th' ador'd in rhyme, would kick in prose ;
 And in those ribbons would have hung
 On which melodiously they sung ;

PART II. CANTO I.

143

That have the hard fate to write best 625

Of those still that deserve it least ;

It matters not how false, or forc'd :

So the best things be said o' th' worst :

It goes for nothing when 'tis said ;

Only the arrow's drawn to th' head, 630

Whether it be a swan or goose

They level at : So shepherds use

To set the same mark on the hip

Both of their sound and rotten sheep :

For wits, that carry low or wide, 635

Must be aim'd higher, or beside

The mark, which else they ne'er come nigh,

But when they take their aim awry.

But I do wonder you should choose

This way t' attack me with your Muse, 640

As one cut out to pass your tricks on,

With fulhams of poetic fiction :

I rather hop'd I should no more

Hear from you o' th' gallanting score :

For hard dry-bastings us'd to prove 645

The readiest remedies of love ;

Next a dry-diet : but if those fail,

Yet this uneasy loop-hol'd jail,

In which ye are hamper'd by the fetlock,

Cannot but put y' in mind of wedlock ; 650

Wedlock, that's worse than any hole here,

If that may serve you for a cooler,

T' allay your mettle, all agog

Upon a wife, the heav'i'r clog :

Nor rather thank your gentler fate, 655

That for a bruis'd or broken pate,

Has freed you from those knobs that grow

Much harder on the marry'd brow ;

But if no dread can cool your courage,
 From vent'ring on that dragon, marriage,
 Yet give me quarter, and advance
 To nobler aims your puissance :
 Level at beauty and at wit ;
 The fairest mark is easiest hit.

660.

Quoth HUDIBRAS, I'm beforehand
 In that already, with your command ;
 For where does beauty and high wit
 But in your constellation meet ?

665

Quoth she, What does a match imply,
 But likeness and equality ?

670

I know you cannot think me fit
 To be th' yoke-fellow of your wit ;
 Nor take one of so mean deserts,
 To be the partner of your parts ;
 A grace, which, if I cou'd believe,
 I've not the conscience to receive.

675

That conscience, quoth HUDIBRAS,
 Is mis-inform'd : I'll state the case :

A man may be a legal donor,
 Of any thing whereof he's owner,
 And may confer it where he lists,
 I' th' judgment of all casuists,
 Then wit, and parts, and valour, may
 Be ali'nated, and made away,
 By those that are proprietors,
 As I may give or sell my horse.

68

6

Quoth she, I grant the case is true
 And proper 'twixt your horse and you ;
 But whether I may take as well
 As you may give away or sell ?
 Buyers you know are bid beware ;
 And worse than thieves receivers are.

6

PART II. CANTO I.

145

How shall I answer true and cry,
 For a roan-gelding, twelve hands high,
 All spurr'd and switch'd, a lock on's hoof, 695
 A sorrel mane? Can I bring proof
 Where, when, by whom, and what y' were sold for,
 And in the open market toll'd for?
 Or should I take you for a stray,
 You must be kept a year and day 700
 (Ere I can own you) here i' the pound;
 Where, if y' are sought, you may be found:
 And in the mean time I must pay
 For all your provender and hay.

Quoth he, It stands me much upon 705

T' enervate this objection;
 And prove myself, by topic clear
 No gelding, as you would infer.
 Loss of virility's averr'd

To be the cause of loss of beard, 710

That's (like embryo in the womb)
 Abortive on the chin become.

This first a woman did invent,
 In envy of man's ornament;

I SEARAMIS, of Babylon, 715

Who first of all cut men o' th' stone,
 To mar their beards, and lay foundation
 Of sow-geldering operation.

Look on this beard, and tell me whether
 Eunuchs wear such, or geldings either? 720

Next it appears I am no horse;
 That I can argue and discourse;
 Have but two legs, and ne'er a tail.

Quoth she, That nothing will avail;
 For some *in* philosophers of late here, 725

Write, men have four legs by nature,

And that 'tis custom makes them go
 Erron'ously upon but two ;
 As 'twas in Germany made good
 B' a boy that lost himself in a wood,
 And growing down to a man, was wont
 With wolves upon all four to hunt.
 As for your reasons drawn from tails,
 We cannot say they're true or false,
 Till you explain yourself, and show,
 B' experiment, 'tis so or no.

730

735

Quoth he, If you'll join issue on't,
 I'll give you satisfactory account ;
 So you will promise, if you lose,
 To settle all, and be my spouse.

740

That never shall be done (quoth she)
 To one that wants a tail, by me :
 For tails by nature sure were meant,
 As well as beards, for ornament :
 And though the vulgar count them homely,
 In men or beast they are so comely,
 So gentee, alamode, and handsome,
 I'll never marry man that wants one ;
 And till you can demonstrate plain,
 You have one equal to your mane,
 I'll be torn piece-meal by a horse,
 Ere I'll take you for better or worse.
 The Prince of CAMBAY's daily food
 Is asp, and basilisk, and toad ;
 Which makes him have so strong a breath,
 Each night he stinks a queen to death ;
 Yet I shall rather lie in's arms
 Than yours, on any other terms.

745

750

755

Quoth he, What nature can afford,
 I shall produce, upon my word ;

760

PART II. CANTO I.

147

And if she ever gave that boon
 To man, I'll prove that I have one :
 I mean by postulate illation,
 When you shall offer just occasion :
 But since y' have yet deny'd to give 765
 My heart, your pris'ner, a reprieve,
 But made it sink down to my heel,
 Let that at least your pity feel ;
 And, for the sufferings of your martyr,
 Give its poor entertainer quarter ; 770
 And, by discharge or main-prize, grant
 Deliv'ry from this base restraint.
 Quoth she, I grieve to see your leg
 Stack in a hole here like a peg ;
 And if I knew which way to do't 775
 (Your honour safe) I'd let you out.
 That Dames by jail-delivery
 Of Errant-Knights have been set free,
 When by enchantment they have been,
 And sometimes for it too, laid in, 780
 Is that which Knights are bound to do
 By order, oath, and honour too :
 For what are they renown'd, and famous else,
 But aiding of distressed damosels?
 But for a Lady, no ways errant, 785
 To free a Knight, we have no warrant
 In any authenthical romance,
 Or classic author, yet of France ;
 And I'd be loth to have you break
 An ancient custom for a freak, 790
 Or innovation introduce
 In place of things of antique use ;
 To free your heels by any course,
 That might b' unwholesome to your spurs ;

Which, if I should consent unto, 795
It is not in my pow'r to do ;
For 'tis a service must be done ye
With solemn previous ceremony,
Which always has been us'd t' untie
The charms of those who here do lie : 800
For as the ancients heretofore
To Honour's Temple had no door,
But that which thorough Virtue's lay,
So from this dungeon there's no way
To honour'd freedom, but by passing 805
That other virtuous school of lashing,
Where Knights are kept in narrow lists,
With wooden lockets 'bout their wrists ;
In which they for a while are tenants,
And for their Ladies suffer penance : 810
Whipping, that's Virtue's governess,
Tutress of arts and sciences ;
That mends the gross mistakes of Nature,
And puts new life into dull matter ;
That lays foundation for renown, 815
And all the honours of the gown.
This suffer'd, they are set at large,
And freed with hon'rabl discharge.
Then in their robes the penitentials
Are straight presented with credentials, 820
And in their way attended on
By magistrates of ev'ry town ;
And, all respect and charges paid,
They're to their ancient seats convey'd.
Now if you'll venture, for my sake, 825
To try the toughness of your back,
And suffer (as the rest have done)
The laying of a whipping on,

PART II. CANTO I.

149

(And may you prosper in your suit,
As you with equal vigour do't,) 839
I here engage myself to loose ye,
And free your heels from Capendewsie.
But since our sex's modesty
Will not allow I should be by,
Bring me my oath, a fair account, 835
And honour too, when you have done't,
And I'll admit you to the place
You claim as due in my good grace.
If matrimony and hanging go
By dest'ny, why not whipping too? 840
What med'cine else can cure the fits
Of lovers when they lose their wits?
Love is a boy by poets stil'd;
Then spare the rod, and spoil the child.
A Persian emp'ror whipp'd his grannam 845
The sea, his mother VENUS came on;
And hence some rev'rend men approve
Of rosemary in making love.
As skilful coopers hoop their tubs
With Lydian and with Phrygian dubs, 850
Why may not whipping have as good
A grace, perform'd in time and mood,
With comely movement, and by art,
Raise passion in a lady's heart?
It is an easier way to make 855
Love by, than that which many take.
Who would not rather suffer whipping,
Than swallow toasts of bits of ribbon?
Make wicked verses, treats, and faces,
And spell names over with beer-glasses? 860
Be under vows to hang and die
Love's sacrifice, and all a lie?

With china-oranges, and tarts,
 And whinnying plays, lay baits for hearts?
 Bribe chamber-maids with love and money, 865
 To break no roguish jests upon ye?
 For lilies limn'd on cheeks, and roses,
 With painted perfumes, hazard noses?
 Or, vent'ring to be brisk and wanton,
 Do penance in a paper lanthorn? 870
 All this you may compound for now,
 By suffering what I offer you;
 Which is no more than has been done
 By knights for Ladies long ago.
 Did not the great LA MANCHA do so 875
 For the INFANTA DEL TOBOSO?
 Did not th' illustrious Bassa make
 Himself a slave for Misse's sake?
 And with bull's pizzle, for her love,
 Was taw'd as gentle as a glove? 880
 Was not young FLORIO sent (to cool
 His flame for BIANCAFIORÉ) to school,
 Where pedant made his pathic bum
 For her sake suffer martyrdom?
 Did not a certain lady whip 885
 Of late her husband's own Lordship?
 And though a grandee of the House,
 Claw'd him with fundamental blows;
 Ty'd him stark naked to a bed-post,
 And fir'd his hide, as if sh' had rid post; 890
 And after, in the sessions-court,
 Where whipping's judg'd, had honour for't?
 This swear you will perform, and then
 I'll set you from th' enchanted den,
 And the magician's circle clear. 895
 Quoth he, I do profess and swear,

PART II. CANTO I.

151

And will perform what you enjoin,
Or may I never see you mine.

Amen, (quoth she ;) then turn'd about,
And bid her Esquire let him out, 900

But ere an artist could be found
T' undo the charms another bound,
The sun grew low, and left the skies,
Put down (some write) by ladies eyes,
The moon pull'd off her veil of light, 905

That hides her face by day from sight,
(Mysterious veil, of brightness made,
That's both her lustre and her shade,)
And in the lanthorn of the night
With shining horns hung out her light; 910

For darkness is the proper sphere,
Where all false glories use t' appear.
The twinkling stars began to muster,
And glitt' with their horror'd lustre,
While sleep the weary'd world reliev'd, 915

By counterfeiting death reviv'd.
His whipping peevish till the morn
Our vot'ry thought it best t' adjourn,
And not to carry on a work
Of such importance in the dark, 920

With erring haste, but rather stay,
And do't in th' open face of day;
And in the mean time go in quest
Of next retreat to take his rest,

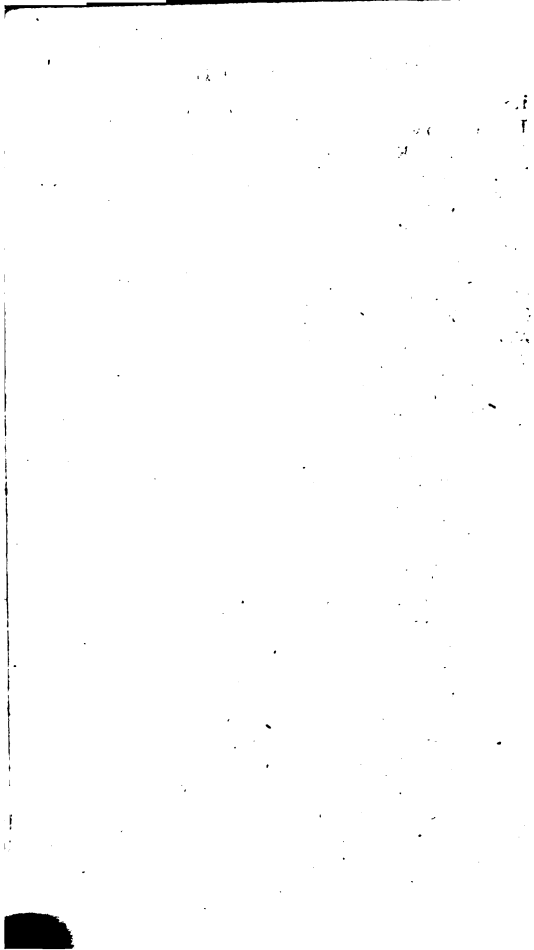
PART II. CANTO II.

THE ARGUMENT.

The Knight and Squire, in hot dispute,
Within an ace of falling out,
Are parted with a sudden fright
Of strange alarm, and stranger sight;
With which adventuring to stickle,
They're sent away in nasty pickle.

TIS strange how some mens' tempers suit
(like beer and brandy) with dispute,
That for their own opinions stand fast
Only to have them claw'd and canvast;
That keep their consciences in cases, 5
As fiddlers do their crowds and bases,
Ne'er to be us'd, but when they're bent
To play a fit for argument;
Make true and false, unjust and just;
Of no use but to be discust; 10
Dispute, and set a paradox
Like a straight boot upon the stocks,
And stretch it more unmercifully
Than HELMONT, MONTAIGN, WHITE, or TULLY;
So th' ancient Stoicks, in their porch, 15
With fierce dispute maintain'd their church;
Beat out their brains in fight and study,
To prove that Virtue is a Body;
That Bonum is an Animal,
Made good with stout polemic brawl; 20
*In which some hundreds on the place
Were slain outright; and many a face*





PART II. CANTO II.

153

Retrench'd of nose, and eyes, and beard,
To maintain what their sect averr'd ;
All which the Knight and Squire, in wrath, 25
Had like to have suffered for their faith,
Each striving to make good his own,
As by the sequel shall be shown.

The Sun had long since, in the lap
Of THETIS, taken out his nap, 30

And, like a lobster boil'd, the morn
From black to red began to turn,
When HUDIBRAS, whom thoughts and aking,
'Twixt sleeping kept all night and waking,
Began to rub his drowsy eyes, 35

And from his couch prepar'd to rise,
Resolving to dispatch the deed
He vow'd to do with trusty speed.

But first, with knocking loud, and bawling,
He rous'd the Squire, in truckle lolling ; 40
And, after many circumstances

Which vulgar authors, in romances,
Do use to spend their time and wits on,
To make impertinent description,
They got (with much ado) to horse, 45
And to the Castle bent their course,

In which he to the Dame before
To suffer whipping duly swore ;
Where now arriv'd, and half unharnest,
To ~~care~~ on the work in earnest, 50

He stopp'd, and paus'd upon the sudden,
And with a serious forehead plodding,
Sprung a new scruple in his head,
Which first he scratch'd, and after said—
Whether it be direct infringing
An oath, if I should wave this swingeing, 55

And what I've sworn to bear, forbear,
 And so b' equivocation swear,
 Or whether it be a lesser sin
 To be forsworn than act the thing,
 Are deep and subtle points, which must,
 T' inform my conscience, be discust ;
 In which to err a tittle may
 To errors infinite make way ;
 And therefore I desire to know
 Thy judgment e'er we further go.

Quoth Ralpho, Since you do enjoin't,
 I shall enlarge upon the point ;
 And, for my own part, do not doubt
 Th' affirmative may be made out.
 But first, to state the case aright,
 For the advantage of our light,
 And thus 'tis : Whether 't be a sin
 To clasp and curry your own skin,
 Greater or less, than to forbear,
 And that you are forsworn, forswear.
 But first, o' th' first : The inward man,
 And outward, like a clan and clan,
 Have always been at daggers-drawing,
 And one another clapper-clawing.
 Not that they really cuff, or fence,
 But in a Spiritual Mystick sense ;
 Which to mistake, and make 'em squabble
 In literal fray's abominable.
 'Tis heathenish, in frequent use
 With Pagans and apostate Jews,
 To offer sacrifice of bridewells,
 Like modern Indians to their idols ;
 And mungrel Christians of our times,
 That expiate less with greater crimes,

PART II. CANTO II.

155

And call the foul abomination,
Contrition and mortification.
Is 't not enough we're bruise'd and kicked
With painful members of the wicked,
Our vessels, that are sanctify'd, 95
Prophesied and curried back to side,
But we must claw ourselves with shameful
And heathen stripes, by their example ;
Which (were there nothing to forbid it)
Is impossible because they did it ; 100
This, therefore, may be justly reckon'd
A heinous sin. Now to the second
That Saints may claim a dispensation
To swear and forswear, on occasion,
I doubt not but it will appear 105
With pregnant light : the point is clear.
Oaths are but words, and words but wind ;
Too feeble implements to bind ;
And hold with deeds proportion so
As shadows to a substance do. 110
Then when they strive for place, 'tis fit
The weaker vessel should submit
Although your Church be opposite
To ours as Black Friars are to White.
In rule and order, yet I grant, 115
You are a Reformado Saint ;
And what the Saints do claim as due,
You may pretend a title to :
But Saints whom oaths and vows oblige,
Know little of their privilege ;
Further (I mean) than carrying on
Some self-advantage of their own :
For if the Dev'l, to serve his turn,
Can tell true, why the Saints should scorn,

When it serves theirs, to swear and lye ; 125
 I think there's little reason why :
 Else h' has a greater pow'r than they,
 Which 't were impiety to say.
 W' are not commanded to forbear
 Indefinitely at all to swear ; 130
 But to swear idly, and in vain,
 Without self-interest or gain :
 For breaking of an oath, and lying,
 Is but a kind of self-denying ;
 A Saint-like virtue : and from hence 135
 Some have taken oaths by Providence ;
 Some, to the glory of the Lord,
 Perjur'd themselves, and broke their word ;
 And this the constant rule and practice
 Of all our late Apostles acts is. 140
 Was not the cause at first begun
 With perjury, and carried on ?
 Was there an oath the Godly took,
 But in due time and place they broke ?
 Did we not bring our oaths in first, 145
 Before our plate, to have them burst,
 And cast in fitter models for
 The present use of Church and War ?
 Did not our Worthies of the House,
 Before they broke the peace, break vows ? 150
 For having freed us first from both
 Th' Allegiance and Supremacy Oath,
 Did they not next compel the Nation
 To take and break the Protestation ?
 To swear, and after to recant 155
 The solemn League and Covenant ?
 To take th' Engagement, and disclaim
 Enforc'd by those who first did frame it.

PART II. CANTO II.

157

Did they not swear, at first, to fight
 For the KING's Safety and his Right, 160
 And after march'd to find him out,
 And charg'd him home with horse and foot;
 But yet still had confidence
 To swear it was in his defence?

Did they not swear to live and die 165
 With ESSEX, and straight laid him by?

If that were all, for some have sworn
 As false as they, if th' did no more,
 Did they not swear to maintain Law,
 In which that swearing made a flaw? 170

For Protestant Religion vow,
 That did that vowing disallow?
 For Privilege of Parliament,
 In which that swearing made a rent?
 And since, of all the three, not one 175
 Is left in being, 'tis well known.

Did they not swear, in express words,
 To prop and back the House of Lords,
 And after turn'd out the whole House-full
 Of Peers, as dang'rous and unusefull? 180

So CROMWELL, with deep oaths and vows,
 Swore all the Commons out of th' House;
 Vow'd that the red-coats would disband,
 Ay, marry would they, at their command;
 And troll'd them on, and swore, and swore, 185
 Till th' army turn'd them out of door.

This tells us plainly what they thought,
 That oaths and swearing go for nought,
 And that by them th' were only meant
 To serve for an expedient. 190

What was the Public Faith found out for,
 But to slur men of what they fought for?

Those mysteries and revelations,
 And therefore topical evasions
 Of subtle turns and shifts of sense,
 Serve best with th' wicked for pretence,
 Such as the learned Jesuits use, 265
 And Presbyterians for excuse
 Against the Protestants, when th' happen
 To find their Churches taken napping :
 As thus : A breach of oath is duple,
 And either way admits a scruple, 270
 And may be, *ex parte* of the maker
 More criminal than th' injur'd taker ;
 For he that strains too far a vow,
 Will break it, like an o'er-bent bow :
 And he that made, and forc'd it, broke it, 275
 Not he that for convenience took it.
 A broken oath is, *quatenus* oath,
 As sound t' all purposes of troth,
 As broken laws are ne'er the worse ;
 Nay, till th' are broken have no force. 280
 What's justice to a man, or laws,
 That never comes within their claws ?
 They have no pow'r, but to admonish :
 Cannot controul, coerce, or punish,
 Until they're broken, and then touch 285
 Those only that do make 'em such.
 Beside, no engagement is allow'd
 By men in prison made for good ;
 For when they're set at liberty,
 They're from th' engagement too set free. 290
 The rabbins write, when any Jew
 Did make to God, or man, a vow,
 Which afterward he found untoward,
 And stubborn to be kept, or too hard,

PART II. CANTO II.

161

Any three other Jews o' th' nation, 295

Might free him from the obligation :

And have not two saints pow'r to ~~was~~

greater privilege than three Jews ?

Is court of conscience, which in man

Should be supreme and sovereign, 300

It fit should be subordinate

To ev'ry petty court i' the state,

And have less power than the lesser,

To deal with perjury at pleasure ?

Have its proceedings disallow'd, or 305

Allow'd, at fancy of Pye-Powder ?

Tell all it does, or does not know,

For swearing *ex officio* ?

Be forc'd t' impeach a broken hedge,

And pigs unring'd at Vis. Franc. Pledge ? 310

Discover thieves, and bawds, recusants,

Priests, witches, eves-droppers, and nuisance ;

Tell who did play at games unlawful,

And who fill'd pots of ale but half-full ;

And have no pow'r at all, nor shift, 315

To help itself at a dead list ?

Why should not conscience have vacation

As well as other courts o' th' nation ;

Have equal power to adjourn,

Appoint appearance and return ; 320

And make as nice distinction serve

To split a case, as those that carve,

Invoking cuckolds' names, hit joints ;

Why should not tricks as slight do points ?

Is not th' High-Court of Justice sworn 325

To judge that law that serves their turn,

Make their own jealousies high-treason,

And fix 'm whomsoe'er they please on ?

Cannot the learned counsel there
 Make laws in any shape appear? 330
 Mould 'em as witches do their clay,
 When they make pictures to destroy?
 And vex 'em into any form
 That fits their purpose to do harm?
 Rack 'em until they do confess, 335
 Impeach of treason whom they please,
 And most perfidiously condemn
 Those that engag'd their lives for them?
 And yet do nothing in their own sense,
 But what they ought by oath and conscience? 340
 Can they not juggle, and, with slight
 Conveyance, play with wrong and right;
 And sell their blasts of wind as dear
 As Lapland witches bottled air?
 Will not fear, favour, bribe and grudge, 345
 The same case sev'ral ways adjudge?
 As seamen, with the self-same gale,
 Will sev'ral different courses sail?
 As when the sea breaks o'er its bounds,
 And overflows the level grounds, 350
 Those banks and dams, that, like a screen,
 Did keep it out, now keep it in;
 So when tyrannic usurpation
 Invades the freedom of a nation,
 The laws o' th' land, that were intended 355
 To keep it out, are made defend it.
 Does not in chancery ev'ry man swear
 What makes best for him in his answer?
 Is not the winding up witnesses
 And nicking more than half the bus'ness? 360
 For witnesses, like watches, go
 Just as they're set, too fast or slow;

PART II. CANTO II.

463

And where in conscience they're strait-lac'd;
'Tis ten to one that side is cast.

Do not your juries give their verdict

As if they felt the cause, not heard it?

And as they please, make matter of fact

Run all on one side, as they're pack't?

Nature has made man's breast no windores,

To publish what he does within doors,

Nor what dark secrets there inhabit,

Unless his own rash folly blab it.

If oaths can do a man no good

In his own bus'ness, why they shou'd

In other matters do him hurt,

I think there's little reason for't.

He that imposes an oath, makes it,

Not he that for convenience takes it:

Then how can any man be said

To break an oath he never made?

These reasons may, perhaps, look oddly

To th' Wicked, though th' evince the Godly;

But if they will not serve to clear

My honour, I am ne'er the near.

Honour is like that glassy bubble.

That finds philosophers such trouble,

Whose least part crack'd, the whole does fly;

And wits are crack'd to find out why.

Quoth RALPHO, Honour's but a word:

To swear by only in a Lord:

In other men 'tis but a huff,

To vapour with instead of proof;

That, like a wen, looks big and swells,

Is senseless, and just nothing else.

Let it (quoth he) be what it will,

It has the world's opinion still.

But as men are not wise that run
 The slightest hazard they may shun,
 There may a medium be found out
 To clear to all the world the doubt ;
 And that is, if a man may do't,
 By proxy whipt, or substitute.

Though nice and dark the point appear,
 (Quoth RALPH) it may hold up and clear.
 That sinners may supply the place
 Of suff'ring Saints is a plain case.
 Justice gives sentence many times
 On one man for another's crimes.

Our brethren of NEW ENGLAND use
 Choice malefactors to excuse,
 And hang the guiltless in their stead,
 Of whom the Churches have less need ;
 As lately 't happen'd : In a town P
 There liv'd a cobbler, and but one,
 That out of doctrine could cut use,
 And mend men's lives as well as shoes.
 This precious brother having slain,
 In time of peace, an Indian,
 (Not out of malice, but mere zeal,
 Because he was an Infidel,)
 The mighty TOTTIPOTTYMOY
 Sent to our elders an envoy,
 Complaining sorely of the breach
 Of league held forth by brother Patch
 Against the articles in force
 Between both Churches, his and ours ;
 For which he crav'd the Saints to render
 Into his hands or hang th' offender :
But they maturely having weigh'd,
They had no more but him o' th' trade.

PART II. CANTO II.

165

(A man that serv'd them in a double
 Capacity, to teach and cobble,
 Resolv'd to spare him ; yet, to do
 The Indur Hoghgan Moughan too
 Impartial justice, in his stead did 435
 Hang an old Weaver, that was bed-rid.
 Then wherefore may not you be skipp'd,
 And in your room another whipp'd?
 For all Philosophers, but the Sceptick,
 Hold whipping may be sympathetick. 440

It is enough, quoth HUNDIRAS,
 Thou hast resolv'd and hear'd the case ;
 And canst, in conscience, not refuse
 From thy own doctrine to raise use.
 I know thou wilt not (for my sake) 445
 Be tender-conscienc'd of thy back.
 Then strip thee off thy carnal jerking,
 And give thy outward-fellow a ferking ;
 For when thy vessel is new hoop'd,
 All leaks of sinning will be stopp'd. 450

Quoth RALPHO, You mistake the matter ;
 For in all scruples of this nature,
 No man includes himself, nor turns
 The point upon his own concerns.
 As no man of his own self catches 455
 The itch, or amorous French aches ;
 So no man does himself convince,
 By his own doctrine, of his sins :
 And though all cry down self, none means
 His ownself in a literal sense. 460
 Beside, it is not only foppish,
 But vile, idolatrous and Popish,
 For one man, out of his own skin,
 To ferk and whip another's sin ;

As pedants out of school-boys' breeches 465

Do claw and curry their own itches.

But in this case it is prophane,

And sinful too, because in vain :

For we must take our oaths upon it,

You did the deed, when I have done it. 470

Quoth HUDIBRAS, That's answer'd soon :

Give us the whip, we'll lay it on.

Quoth RALPHO, That we may swear true,

'Twere properer that I whipp'd you :

For when with your consent 'tis done, 475

The act is really your own.

Quoth HUDIBRAS, It is in vain

(I see) to argue 'gainst the grain ;

Or, like the stars, incline men to

What they're averse themselves to do : 480

For when disputes are weary'd out,

'Tis interest still resolves the doubt :

But since no reason can confute ye,

I'll try to force you to your duty ;

For so it is, howe'er you mince it ; 485

As ere we part, I shall evince it ;

And curry (if you stand out) whether

You will or no, your stubborn leather.

Canst thou refuse to bear thy part

I' th' publick work, base as thou art ? 490

To higgle thus for a few blows,

To gain thy Knight an op'lent spouse ;

Whose wealth his bowels yearn to purchase,

Merely for th' interest of the Churches ;

And when he has it in his claws, 495

Will not be hide-bound to the Cause ?

Nor shalt thou find him a Curmudgin,

If thou dispatch it without grudging.

PART II. CANTO II.

167

not, resolve, before we go,
 it you and I must pull a crow. 500
 "honest (quoth RALPHO) as the ancients
 wisely, Have a care o' th' main chance,
 and look before you ere you leap;
 for as you sow, y' are like to reap:
 And were y' as good as George-a-Green, 505
 I shall make bold to turn agen:
 Nor am I doubtful of the issue
 In a just quarrel, and mine is so.
 Is't fitting for a man of honour
 To whip the Saints, like Bishop Bonner? 510
 A Knight t' usurp the beadle's office,
 For which y' are like to raise brave trophies.
 But I advise you (not for fear,
 But for your own sake) to forbear;
 And for the Churches, which may chance, 515
 From hence, to spring a variance;
 And raise among themselves new scruples,
 Whom common danger hardly couples.
 Remember how, in arms and politicks,
 We still have worsted all your holy tricks; 520
 Trepann'd your party with intrigue,
 And took your grandees down a peg;
 New modell'd th' army, and cashier'd
 All that to legion SMEC adher'd;
 Made a mere utensil o' your Church, 525
 And after left it in the lurch;
 A scaffold to build up our own,
 And, when w' had done with't, pull'd it down;
 Capoch'd your Rabbins of the Synod,
 And snap'd their Canons with a why-not; 530
 (Grave Synod Men, that were rever'd
 For solid face and depth of beard;)

Their classic model prove a maggot,
 Their direct'ry an Indian Pagod;
 And drown'd their discipline like a kitten, 535
 On which they'd been so long a sitting;
 Decry'd it as a holy cheat,
 Grown out of date, and obsolete;
 And all the Saints of the first grass
 As casting foals of Balaam's ass. 540

At this the Knight grew high in chafe;
 And staring furiously on RALPH,
 He trembled, and look'd pale with ire;
 Like ashes first, then red as fire.
 Have I (quoth he) been ta'en in fight, 545
 And for so many moons lain by't;
 And, when all other means did fail,
 Have been exchang'd for tubs of ale?
 Not but they thought me worth a ransom
 Much more consid'able and handsome, 550
 But for their own sakes, and for fear
 They were not safe when I was there;
 Now to be baffled by a scoundrel;
 An upstart sect'ry, and a mungrel;
 Such as breed out of peccant humours, 555
 Of our own Church, like wens or tumours,
 And, like a maggot in a sore,
 Would that which gave it life devour;
 It never shall be done or said:
 With that he seiz'd upon his blade: 560
 And RALPH too, as quick and bold,
 Upon his basket-hilt laid hold,
 With equal readiness prepar'd
 To draw, and stand upon his guard;
 When both were parted on the sudden, 565
 With hideous clamour, and a loud one.

PART II. CANTO II.

169

As if all sorts of noise had been
 Contracted into one loud din ;
 Or that some member to be chosen,
 Had got the odds above a thousand, 570
 And, by the greatness of its noise,
 Proved fittest for his country's choice.
 This strange surprisal put the Knight
 And wrathful Squire into a fright ;
 And though they stood prepar'd, with fatal 575
 Impetuous rancour to join battel,
 Both thought it was the wisest course
 To wave the fight and mount to horse,
 And to securely swift retreating,
 Themselves from danger of worse beating. 580
 Yet neither of them would disparage,
 By utt'ring of his mind, his courage,
 Which made them stoutly keep their ground,
 With horror and disdain wind-bound.
 And now the cause of all their fear 585
 (By slow degrees approach'd so near,
 They might distinguish different noise
 Of horns, and pans, and dogs, and bays,
 And kettle-drums, whose sullen dub
 Sounds like the hooping of a tub. 590
 But when the sight appear'd in view,
 They found it was an antique show ;
 A triumph, that, for pomp and state,
 Did proudest Romans emulate :
 For as the aldermen of Rome 595
 Their foes at training overcome,
 And not enlarging territory,
 (As some mistaken write in story,)
 Being mounted, in their best array,
 Upon a carr, and who but they ! 600

And follow'd with a world of tall-jacks
 That merry ditties troll'd, and ballads,
 Did ride with many a good-morrow,
 Crying, Hey for our Town! through the Borough,
 So when this triumph drew so nigh 605
 They might particulars descry,
 They never saw two things so pat,
 In all respects, as this and that.
 First, he that led the cavalcade,
 Wore a sow-gelder's flagellate, 610
 On which he blew as strong a levet
 As well-fee'd lawyer on his breviate,
 When over one another's heads
 They charge (three ranks at once) like Swedes.
 Next pans and kettles of all keys, 615
 From trebles down to double base;
 And after them, upon a nag,
 That might pass for a forehead stag,
 A cornet rode, and on his staff
 A smock display'd did proudly wave. 620
 Then bagpipes of the loudest drones,
 With snuffing broken-winded tones,
 Whose blasts of air, in pockets shut,
 Sound filthier than from the gut,
 And make a viler noise than swine 625
 In windy weather, when they whine.
 Next one upon a pair of panniers,
 Full fraught with that which for good manners
 Shall here be nameless, mixt with grains,
 Which he dispens'd among the swains, 630
 And busily upon the crowd
 At random round about bestow'd.
 Then, mounted on a horned horse,
 One bore a gauntlet and gilt spurs.

RT II. CANTO II.

171

'd to the pummel of a long sword
He held reverst, the point turn'd downward.

635

Next after, on a raw-bon'd steed,
The conqueror's standard-bearer rid,
And bore aloft before the champion
A petticoat display'd, and rampant;
Near whom the Amazon triumphant
Bestrid her beast, and on the rump on't
Sat face to tail, and bum to bum,

640

For warrior whilom overcome;
Armed with a spindle and a distaff,
Whom, as he rode, she made him twist off;
And when he loiter'd, o'er her shoulder
Chastis'd the reformado soldier.

645

Before the dame, and round about,
March'd whiffers and staffiers on foot,
With lackies, grooms, valets, and pages,
In fit and proper equipages;

650

Of whom some torches bore, some links,
Before the proud virago minx,

That was both Madam and a Don,
Like NERO'S SPORUS, or POPE JOAN;
And at fit periods the whole rout

655

Set up their throats with clamorous shout.
The Knight, transported, and the Squire,
Put up their weapons, and their ire;
And HUDIBRAS, who us'd to ponder
On such sights with judicious wonder,
Could hold no longer to impart

660

His animadversions, for his heart.

Quoth he, In all my life, till now,
I ne'er saw so prophane a show.

665

It is a Paganish invention,
Which heathen writers often mention:

And he who made it had read GOODWIN,
 Or ROSS, or CÆLIUS RHODOGINE,
 With all the Grecians, SPEEDS and STOWS,
 That best describe those ancient shows;
 And has observ'd all fit decorums
 We find describ'd by old historians:
 For as the Roman conqueror, 675
 That put an end to foreign war,
 Ent'ring the town in triumph for it,
 Bore a slave with him, in his chariot;
 So this insulting female brave,
 Carries behind her here a slave: 680
 And as the ancients long ago,
 When they in field defy'd the foe;
 Hung out their mantles della guerre,
 So her proud standard-bearer here
 Waves on his spear, in dreadful manner, 685
 A Tyrian-petticoat for banner!
 Next links and torches, heretofore
 Still borne before the emperor.
 And as, in antique triumphs, eggs
 Were borne for mystical intrigues, 690
 There's one with truncheon, like a ladle,
 That carries eggs too, fresh or addle;
 And still at random, as he goes,
 Among the rabble-rout bestows.
 Quoth Ralpho, You mistake the matter; 695
 For all th' antiquity you smatter,
 Is but a riding, us'd of course
 When the grey mare's the better horse;
 When o'er the breeches greedy women
 Fight to extend their vast dominion; 700
 And in the cause impatient Grizel
 Has drubb'd her Husband with bull's pizzle.

PART II. CANTO II

173

brought him under Covert-Baron,
 To turn her vassal with a murrain;
 When wives their sexes shift, like hares, 705
 And ride their husbands like night-mares,
 And they in mortal battle vanquish'd,
 Of their charters disenfranchis'd,
 And by the right of war, like gills,
 Condemn'd to distaff, horns, and wheels: 710
 For men by their wives are cow'd,
 The laws of course are understood.

QUEEN HUDIBRAS, thou still giv'st sentence
 Impertinently, and against sense.
 Tis not the least disparagement 715
 To be defeated by th' event,
 Nor to be beaten by main force;
 That does not make a man the worse,
 Although his shoulders with battoon
 Be claw'd and cudgel'd to some tune. 720
 A taylor's 'prentice has no hard
 Measure that's bang'd with a true yard;
 But to turn tail, or run away,
 And without blows give up the day,
 Or to surrender ere th' assault, 725
 That's no man's fortune, but his fault,
 And renders men of honour less
 Than all th' adversity of success;
 And only unto such this shew
 Of horns and petticoats is due. 730
 There is a lesser profanation,
 Like that the Romans call'd ovation:
 For as ovation was allow'd
 For conquest purchas'd without blood,
 So men decree these lesser shows 735
 For victory gotten without blows;

By dint of sharp hard words, which some
 Give battle with, and overcome.
 These mounted in a chair-carule,
 Which moderns call a cocking-stool;
 March proudly to the river's side,
 And o'er the waves in triumph ride;
 Like Dukes of Venice, who are said
 The Adriatick Sea to wed;
 And have a gentler wife than these
 For whom the state decrees those shows;
 But both are heathenish; and come
 From th' whores of Babylon and Rome;
 And by the Saints should be withstood,
 As Antichristian and lewd;
 And we, as such, should now contribute
 Our utmost struggling to prohibit;
 This said, they both advanc'd, and rode
 A dog-trot through the bawling crowd,
 To attack the leader, and still prest;
 Till they approach'd him breast to breast;
 Then HUDIBRAS, with face and hand,
 Made signs for silence; which obtain'd,
 What means (quoth he) this Devil's procession?
 With men of orthodox profession?
 'Tis ethnic and idolatrous,
 From heathenism deriv'd to us:
 Does not the Whore of Babylon ride
 Upon her horned beast astride
 Like this proud dame, who either is
 A type of her, or she of this?
 Are things of superstitious function
 Fit to be us'd in Gospel Sunshine?
 It is an Antichristian opera,
 Much us'd in midnight tunes of Popery;

PART II. CANTO II.

175

Or self-invention;
 Or profane intentions;
 Or that sex, for scolding,
 From the Saints are so beholden.
 Men, who were our first Apostles
 About whose aid we had been lost else;
 Women, that left no stone unturn'd
 In which the Cause might be concern'd;
 Brought in their children's spoons and whistles,
 To purchase swords, carbines, and pistols;
 Their husbands, cullies, and sweet-hearts,
 To take the Saints and Churches' parts;
 Drew several gifted Brethren in,
 That for the Bishops would have been,
 And fix'd 'em constant to the party,
 With motives powerful and hearty;
 Their husbands robb'd, and made hard shifts
 T' administer unto their gifts
 All they cou'd rap, and rend, and pilfer,
 To scraps and ends of gold and silver;
 Rubb'd down the Teachers, tir'd and spent
 With holding forth for Parliament,
 Pamper'd and edify'd their zeal
 With marrow-puddings many a meal;
 Enabled them, with store of meat,
 On controverted points to eat;
 And cram'd 'em, till their guts did ache,
 With cawdle, custard, and plum-cake:
 What have they done, or what left undone,
 That might advance the Cause at London?
 March'd rank and file, with drum and ensign,
 T' intrench the city for defence in?
 Rais'd rampiers with their own soft hands,
 To put the enemy to stands;

From ladies down to oyster-wenches, 805
 Labour'd like pioneers in trenches ;
 Fell to their pick-axes, and tools,
 And help'd the men to dig like moles ?
 Have not the handmaids of the city
 Chose of their members a committee, 810
 For raising of a common purse
 Out of their wages to raise horse ?
 And do they not as triers sit,
 To judge what officers are fit ?
 Have they——? At that an egg let fly, 815
 Hit him directly o'er the eye,
 And running down his cheek, besmear'd,
 With orange tawny slime, his beard ;
 But beard and slime being of one hue,
 The wound the less appear'd in view. 820
 Then he that on the panniers rode,
 Let fly on th' other side a load,
 And, quickly charg'd again, gave fully
 In RALPHO'S face another volley.
 The Knight was startled with the smell, 825
 And for his sword began to feel ;
 And RALPHO, smother'd with the stink,
 Grasp'd his ; when one, that bore a link,
 O' th' sudden clapp'd his flaming cudgel,
 Like linstock, to the horse's touch-hole ; 830
 And straight another, with his flambeau,
 Gave RALPHO'S o'er the eye a damn'd blow.
 The beasts began to kick and sting,
 And forc'd the rout to make a ring ;
 Through which they quickly broke their way, 835
 And brought them off from farther fray ;
 And though disorder'd in retreat,
 Each of them stoutly kept his seat :

PART III. CANTO II.

177

For quitting both their swords and reins,
 They grasp'd with all their strength the manes,
 And, to avoid the foe's pursuit, 841
 With spurring put their cattle to it;
 And all all four were out of wind,
 And danger too, ne'er look'd behind.
 After th' had paus'd a while, supplying 845
 Their spirits, spent with fight and flying,
 And HUDIBRAS recruited force
 Of lungs for action or discourse,
 Quoth he, That man is sure to lose
 That fouls his hands with dirty foes: 850
 For where no honour's to be gain'd,
 'Tis thrown away in b'ing maintain'd.
 'Twas ill for us we had to do
 With so dishonourable a foe:
 For though the law of arms doth bar 855
 The use of venom'd shot in war,
 Yet, by the nauseous smell, and noisom,
 Their case-shot savours strong of poison;
 And doubtless have been chew'd with teeth
 Of some that had a stinking breath; 860
 Else, when we put it to the push,
 They had not giv'n us such a brush.
 But as those pultroops, that fling dirt,
 Do but defile, but cannot hurt,
 So all the honour they have won, 865
 Or we have lost, is much as one.
 'Twas well we made so resolute
 And brave retreat without pursuit;
 For if we had not, we had sped
 Much worse, to be in triumph led; 870
 Than which the ancients held no state
 Of man's life more unfortunate.

But if this bold adventure e'er
Do chance to reach the widow's ear,
It may, b'ing destin'd to assert
Her sex's honour, reach her heart:
And as such homely traits (they say)
Portend good fortune, so this may.
" VESPASIAN being daub'd with dirt,
Was destin'd to the empire for't;
And from a scavenger did come
To be a mighty Prince in Rome:
And will it may not this foul address
Presage in love the same success?
Then let us straight, to cleanse our wounds,
Advance in quest of nearest ponds;
And after (as we first design'd)
Swear I've perform'd what she enjoin'd.

875

880

885





PART II. CANTO III.

THE ARGUMENT.

The Knight, with various Doubts possest
To win the Lady goes in quest
Of Sidrophel, the Rosy-Crucian,
To know the Destinies' Resolution;
With whom being met, they both chop Logic
About the Science Astrologick,
Till falling from Dispute to Fight,
The Conjurer's worsted by the Knight.

DOUBTLESS the pleasure is as great
Of being cheated as to cheat;
As lookers-on feel most delight,
That least perceive a juggler's slight;
And still the less they understand,
The more th' admire his flight of hand.

Some with a noise, and greasy light,
Are snapt, as men catch larks by night;
Ensnar'd and hamper'd by the soul,
As nooses by their legs catch fowl.
Some with a med'cine, and receipt,
Are drawn to nibble at the bait;
And tho' it be a two-foot trout,
'Tis with a single hair pull'd out.

Others believe no voice t' an organ
So sweet as lawyer's in his bar-gown,
Until with subtle cobweb-cheats
Th' are catch'd in knotted law, like nets;
In which, when once they are imbrangled,
The more they stir, the more they're tangled;
And while their purses can dispute,
There's no end of th' immortal suit.

Others still gape t' anticipate
 The cabinet-designs of fate;
 Apply to wizards, to foresee 25
 What shall and what shall never be;
 And, as those cultures do forebode,
 Believe events prove bad or good:
 A flum more senseless than the roguery
 Of old aruspicy and aug'ry. 30
 That out of garbages of cattle
 Presag'd th' events of truce or battle;
 From flight of birds, or chickens pecking,
 Success of great'st attempts would reckon:
 Though cheats, yet more intelligible 35
 Than those that with the stars do fribble.
 This HUDIBRAS by proof found true,
 As in due time and place we'll shew:
 For he, with beard and face made clean,
 B'ing mounted on his steed agen, 40
 (And RALPHO got a cock-horse too
 Upon his beast with much ado)
 Advanc'd on for the Widow's house,
 To acquit himself, and pay his vows;
 When various thoughts began to bustle, 45
 And with his inward man to juggle.
 He thought what danger might accrue
 If he should find he swore untrue;
 Or if his squire or he should fail,
 And not be punctual in their tale: 50
 It might at once the ruin prove
 Both of his honour, faith, and love.
 But if he should forbear to go,
 She might conclude he had broke his vow;
 And that he durst not now for shame 55
 Appear in court to try his claim.

This was the pen'worth of his thought,
To pass time and uneasy trot.

Quoth he, In all my past adventures
I ne'er was set so on the tenters ; 60

Or taken tardy with dilemma,
That ev'ry way I turn does hem me,
And with inextricable doubt
Besets my puzzled wits about : 65

For tho' the dame has been my bail,
To free me from enchanted jail,
Yet as a dog, committed close
For some offence, by chance breaks loose,
And quits his clog, but all in vain,
He still draws after him his chain ; 70

So, though my ankle she has quitted,
My heart continues still committed ;
And like a bail'd and main-priz'd lover,
Altho' at large, I am bound over ;
And when I shall appear in-court, 75

To plead my cause, and answer for't,
Unless the judge do partial prove,
What will become of me and love ?
For if in our account we vary,
Or but in circumstance miscarry ; 80

Or if she put me to strict proof,
And make me pull my doublet off,
To shew, by evident record
Writ on my skin, I've kept my word ;
How can I e'er expect to have her, 85

Having demurr'd unto her favour ?
But faith, and love, and honour lost,
Shall be reduc'd t' a Knight o' th' Post.
Beside, that stripping may prevent
What I'm to prove by argument, 90

And justify I have a tail ;
 And that way, too, my proof may fail.
 Oh ! that I cou'd enucleate,
 And solve the problems of my fate ;
 Or find, by necromantick art, 95
 How far the dest'nies take my part !
 For if I were not more than certain
 To win and wear her, and her fortune,
 I'd go no farther in this courtship,
 To hazard soul, estate, and worship : 100
 For though an oath obliges not
 Where any thing is to be got,
 (As thou hast prov'd) yet 'tis profane,
 And sinful, when men swear in vain.
 Quoth RALPH, Not far from hence doth dwell 105
 A cunning man, hight SIDROPHEL,
 That deals in destiny's dark counsels,
 And sage opinions of the Moon sells ;
 To whom all people, far and near,
 On deep importances repair ; 110
 When brass and pewter hap to stray,
 And linen slinks out of the way ;
 When geese and pullen are seduc'd,
 And sows of sucking-pigs are chows'd ;
 When cattle feel indisposition, 115
 And need th' opinion of physician ;
 When murrain reigns in hogs or sheep,
 And chickens languish of the pip ;
 When yeast and outward means do fail,
 And have no power to work on ale ; 120
 When butter does refuse to come,
 And love proves cross and humoursome :
 To him with questions, and with urine,
 They for discov'ry flock, or curing.

PART II. CANTO III.

183

Quoth HUDIBRAS, This SIDROPHEL 125
I've heard of, and should like it well,
If thou canst prove the Saints have freedom
To go to Sorc'ers when they need 'em.

Says RALPHO, There's no doubt of that · 130
Those principles I quoted-late,

Prove that the Godly may alledge
For any thing their privilege ;
And to the Dev'l himself may go,
If they have motives thereunto.

For, as there is a war between 135
The Dev'l and them, it is no sin,
If they by subtle stratagem
Make use of him, as he does them.

Has not this present Parliament
A w Ledger to the Devil sent, 140
Fully impow'r'd to treat about
Finding revolted witches out ?

And has not he, within a year,
Hang'd threescore of 'em in one shire ?
Some only for not being drown'd, 145
And some for sitting above ground,

Whole days and nights, upon their breeches,
And feeling pain, were hang'd for witches.
And some for putting knavish tricks
Upon green geese and turky-chicks, 150

Or pigs, that suddenly deceast
Of griefs unnat'ral, as he guest ;
Who after prov'd himself a witch,
And made a rod for his own breech.

Did not the Devil appear to MARTIN 155
LUTHER in Germany for certain ;
And *won'd have gull'd him with a trick,*
But MARTIN was too politick ?

Did he not help the * Dutch to purge
 At ANTWERP their Cathedral Church? 160
 y Sing catches to the Saints at MASCON,
 And tell them all they came to ask him?
 z Appear'd in divers shapes to KELLY,
 And speak i' th' Nun of LONDON's belly?
 a Meet with the Parliament's Committee 165
 At WOODSTOCK on a pers'nal treaty?
 b At SARUM take a cavalier
 I' th' Cause's service prisoner?
 As WITHERS, in immortal rhyme,
 Has register'd to after-time! 170
 Do not our great Reformers use
 This SIDROPHEL to forebode news?
 To write of victories next year,
 And castles taken yet i' th' air?
 Of battles fought at sea, and ships 175
 Sunk two years hence, the last eclipse?
 A total overthrow giv'n the King
 In Cornwall, horse and foot, next Spring!
 And has not he point-blank foretold
 Whats'e'er the Close Committee would? 180
 Made Mars and Saturn for the Cause?
 The moon for Fundamental Laws?
 The Ram, the Bull, and Goat declare
 Against the Book of Common-Pray'r?
 The Scorpion take the Protestation, 185
 And Bear engage for Reformation?
 Made all the Royal Stars recant,
 Compound and take the Covenant?
 Quoth HUDIBRAS, The case is clear,
 The Saints may 'mploy a Conjuror, 190
 As thou hast prov'd it by their practice;
 No argument like matter of fact is;

PART II. CANTO III.

185

And we are best of all led to
Men's principles by what they do.
Then let us straight advance in quest 195
Of this profound Gymnosophist :
And as the Fates and he advise,
Pursue or wave this enterprise.

This said, he turn'd about his steed,
And estsoons on th' adventure rid ; 200
Where leave we him and RALPH a while,
And to the Conjuror turn our stile,
To let our reader understand
What's useful of him before-hand.

He had been long t'wards mathematicks, 205
Optics, philosophy, and staticks,
Magick, horoscopy, astrology,
And was old dog at physiology :
But as a dog that turns the spit
Bestirs himself, and plies his feet, 210
To climb the wheel, but all in vain,
His own weight brings him down again,
And still he's in the self-same place
Where at his setting out he was ;

So in the circle of the arts 215
Did he advance his nat'ral parts,
Till falling back still, for retreat,
He fell to juggle, cant, and cheat :
For as those fowls that live in water
Are never wet, he did but smatter : 220

Whate'er he labour'd to appear,
His understanding still was clear :
Yet none a deeper knowledge boasted,
Since old ~~C~~ HONG-BACON and BOB GROSTED.
Th' Intelligible World he knew, 225
And all men dream on't to be true ;

That in this world there's not a wart
 That has not there a counterpart ;
 Nor can there on the face of ground
 An individual beard be found, 230
 That has not, in that foreign nation,
 A fellow of the self-same fashion ;
 So cut, so colour'd, and so curl'd,
 As those are in th' Inferior World.
 H' had read DEE's Prefaces before, 235
 The DEV'L, and EUCLID, o'er and o'er,
 And all the intrigues 'twixt him and KELLY,
 LESCUS and th' EMPEROR, wou'd tell ye ;
 But with the Moon was more familiar
 Than e'er was almanack well-willer ; 240
 Her secrets understood so clear,
 That some believ'd he had been there ;
 Knew when she was in the fittest mood
 For cutting corns, or letting blood ;
 When for anointing scabs or itches, 245
 Or to the bum applying leeches ;
 When sows and bitches may be spay'd,
 And in what sign best cyder's made :
 Whether the wane be, or increase,
 Best to set garlick, or sow pease : 250
 Who first found out the Man i' th' Moon,
 That to the ancients was unknown ;
 How many dukes, and earls, and peers,
 Are in the planetary spheres ;
 Their airy empire and command, 255
 Their sev'ral strengths by sea and land ;
 What factions th' have, and what they drive at
 In public vogue, or what in private ;
 With what designs and interests
 Each party manages contests. 260

He made an instrument to know
 If the Moon shine at full or no;
 That wou'd, as soon as e'er she shone, straight
 Whether 'twere day or night demonstrate;
 Tell what her d'meter t' an inch is, 265
 And prove that she's not made of green cheese.
 It wou'd demonstrate, that the Man in
 The Moon's a Sea Mediterranean;
 And that it is no dog nor bitch,
 That stands behind him at his breech, 270
 But a huge Caspian Sea, or lake,
 With arms, which men for legs mistake;
 How large a gulph his tail composes,
 And what a goodly bay his nose is;
 How many German leagues by th' scale 275
 Cape Snout's from Promontory Tail.
 He made a planetary gin,
 Which rats would run their own heads in,
 And came on purpose to be taken,
 Without th' expence of cheese or bacon. 280
 With lute-strings he would counterfeit
 Maggots that crawl on dish of meat:
 Quote moles and spots on any place
 O' th' body, by the index face:
 Detect lost maiden-heads by sneezing, 285
 Or breaking wind of dames, or pissing;
 Cure warts and corns with application
 Of med'cines to th' imagination;
 Fright agues into dogs, and scare
 With rhimes the tooth-ach and catarrh; 290
 Chace evil spirits away by dint
 Of pickle, horse-shoe, hollow-dint;
 Spit fire out of a walnut-shell,
 Which made the Roman slaves rebel;

And fire a mine in China here 285
 With sympathetic gunpowder.
 He knew what's ever's to be known,
 But much more than he knew would own;
 What med'cine 'twas that **PARACELSUS**
 Could make a man with, as he tells us; 300
 What figur'd slates are best to make
 On watry surface duck or drake;
 What bowling-stones, in running race
 Upon a board, have swiftest pace;
 Whether a pulse beat in the black 305
 List of a dappled louse's back;
 If systole or diastole move
 Quickest when he's in wrath or love;
 When two of them do run a race;
 Whether they gallop, trot, or pace: 310
 How many scores a flea will jump,
 Of his own length, from head to rump;
 Which **SOCRATES** and **CHEREPHON**,
 In vain, assay'd so long agon;
 Whether his snout a perfect nose is, 315
 And not an elephant's proboscis;
 How many diff'rent specieses
 Of maggots breed in rotten cheese;
 And which are next of kin to those
 Engender'd in a chandler's nose; 320
 Or those not seen, but understood,
 That live in vinegar and wood.
 A poultry wretch he had, half-starv'd,
 That him in place of Zany serv'd.
 Hight **WHACHUM**, bred to dash and draw, 325
 Not wine, but more unwholesome Jaw;
 To make 'twixt words and lines huge gaps,
 Wide as meridians in maps;

PART II. CANTO III.

189

To squander paper, and spare ink,
Or cheat men of their words, some think. 330
From this, by merited degrees,
He'd to more high advancement rise ;
To be an under-conjurer,
Or journeyman astrologer.
His business was to pump and wheedle, 335
And men with their own keys unriddle ;
To make them to themselves give answers,
For which they pay the necromancers ;
To fetch and carry intelligence,
Of whom, and what, and where, and whence, 340
And all discoveries disperse
Among th' whole pack of conjurers :
What cut-purses have left with them
For the right owners to redeem ;
And what they dare not vent find out, 345
To gain themselves and th' art repute ;
Draw figures, schemes, and horoscopes,
Of Newgate, Bridewell, brokers' shops,
Of thieves ascendant in the cart ;
And find out all by rules of art ; 350
Which way a serving-man, that's run
With cloaths or money away, is gone :
Who pick'd a fob at holding forth ;
And where a watch, for half the worth,
May be redeem'd ; or stolen plate 355
Restor'd at conscionable rate.
Beside all this, he serv'd his master
In quality of poetaster ;
And rhimes appropriate could make
To ev'ry month i' th almanack : 360
What terms begin and end could tell,
With their returns, in doggerel :

When the exchequer opes and shuts,
 And sowgelder with safety cuts ;
 When men may eat and drink their fill, 365
 And when be temp'rate, if they will ;
 When use and when abstain from vice,
 Figs, grapes, phlebotomy, and spice.
 And as in prison mean rogues beat
 Hemp for the service of the great, 370
 So WHACHUM beats his dirty brains,
 T' advance his master's fame and gains,
 And, like the Devil's oracles,
 Put into dogg'rel rhimes his spells,
 Which, over ev'ry month's blank page 375
 I' th' almanack, strange bilks presage.
 He would an elegy compose
 On maggots squeez'd out of his nose ;
 In lyrick numbers write an ode on
 His mistress, eating a black-pudden : 380
 And when imprison'd air escap'd her,
 It puf't him with poetic rapture.
 His sonnets charm'd th' attentive crowd,
 By wide-mouth'd mortal troll'd aloud,
 That 'circl'd with his long-ear'd guests, 385
 Like ORPHEUS look'd among the beasts.
 A carman's horse could not pass by,
 But stood ty'd up to poetry :
 No porter's burthen pass'd along,
 But serv'd for burthen to his song : 390
 Each window like a pill'ry appears,
 With heads thrust through, nail'd by the ears :
 All trades run in as to the sight
 Of monsters, or their dear delight
 The gallow tree, when cutting purse 395
 Breeds bus'ness for heroic verse,

Which none does hear, but would have hung
T' have been the theme of such a song.

Those two together long had liv'd,
In mansion prudently contriv'd ; 400

Where neither tree nor house could bar

The free detection of a star ;

And nigh an ancient obelisk

Was rais'd by him, found out by Fisk,

On which was written, not in words, 405

But hieroglyphic mute of birds,

Many rare pithy saws concerning

The worth of astrologic learning.

From top of this there hung a rope,

To which he fasten'd telescope ; 410

The spectacles with which the stars

He reads in smallest characters.

It happen'd as a boy, one night,

Did fly his tassel of a kite,

The strangest long-wing'd hawk that flies, 415

That, like a bird of Paradise,

Or herald's martlet, has no legs,

Nor hatches young ones, nor lays eggs ;

His train was six yards long, milk-white,

At th' end of which there hung a light, 420

Inclos'd in lanthorn, made of paper,

That far off like a star did appear.

This SIDROPHEL by chance espy'd,

And with amazement staring wide,

Bless us ! quoth he, what dreadful wonder 425

Is that appears in Heaven yonder ?

A comet, and without a beard !

Or star that ne'er before appear'd !

I'm certain 'tis not in the scrawl

Of all those beasts, and fish, and fowl, 430

With which, like Indian plantations,
The learned stock the constellations ;
Nor those that draw for signs have bin
To th' houses where the planets inn.

It must be supernatural, 435

• Unless it be that cannon-ball
That, shot i' th' air point-blank upright,
Was borne to that prodigious height,
That learn'd philosophers maintain,
It ne'er came backwards down again; 440

But in the airy region yet
Hangs like the body of MAHOMET:
For if it be above the shade
That by the earth's round bulk is made,
'Tis probable it may from far 445
Appear no bullet, but a star.

This said, he to his engine flew,
Plac'd near at hand, in open view,
And rais'd it 'till it levell'd right
Against the glow-worm tail of kite, 450
Then peeping thro', Bless us! (quoth he)
It is a planet, now I see ;

And, if I err not, by his proper
Figure, that's like tobacco-stopper,
It should be Saturn. Yes, 'tis clear 455
'Tis Saturn; but what makes him there ?

He's got between the Dragon's Tail
And farther Leg behind o' th' Whale.
Pray heav'n divert the fatal omen,
For 'tis a prodigy not common; 460
And can no less than the world's end,
Or Nature's funeral, portend.

*With that he fell again to pry
Thro' perspective more wistfully,*

PART II. CANTO III.

193

When by mischance the fatal string, 465

That kept the tow'ring fowl on wing,

Breaking, down fell the star. Well shot,

Quoth WHACHUM, who right wisely thought

H' had levell'd at a star, and hit it :

But SIDROPHEL, more subtle-witted, 470

Cry'd out, What horrible and fearful

Portent is this, to see a star fall?

It threatens nature, and the doom

Will not be long before it come !

When stars do fall, 'tis plain enough, 475

The day of judgment's not far off ;

f As lately 'twas reveal'd to SEDGWICK,

And some of us find out by magick.

Then since the time we have to live

In this world's shorten'd, let us strive 480

To make our best advantage of it,

And pay our losses with our profit.

This feat fell out not long before

The Knight, upon the forenam'd score,

In quest of SIDROPHEL advancing, 485

Was now in prospect of the mansion ;

Whom he discov'ring, turn'd his glass,

And found far off, 'twas HUDIBRAS.

WHACHUM, (quoth he), look yonder, some

To try or use our art are come : 490

The one's the learned Knight : seek out,

And pump 'em what they come about.

WHACHUM advanc'd, with all submissness,

T' accost 'em, but much more their bus'ness.

He held a stirrup, while the Knight 495

From leathern bare-bones did alight ;

And taking from his hand the bridle;

Approach'd the dark Squire to unriddle.

He gave him first the time o' th' day,
 And welcom'd him, as he might say : 500
 He ask'd him whence he came, and whither
 Their bus'ness lay ? Quoth RALPHO, Hither.
 Did you not lose ? - Quoth RALPHO, Nay.
 Quoth WHACHUM, Sir, I meant your way !
 Your Knight—Quoth RALPHO, Is a lover, 505
 And pains intolerable doth suffer :
 For lovers' hearts are not their own hearts,
 Nor lights, nor lungs, and so forth downwards.
 What time, (quoth RALPHO), Sir ?—Too long ;
 Three years it off and on has hung.— 510
 Quoth he, I meant what time o'the day 'tis.—
 Quoth RALPHO, Between seven and eight 'tis.
 Why then, (quoth Whachum) my small art
 Tells me, the dame has a hard heart,
 Or great estate.—Quoth RALPHO, A jointer, 515
 Which makes him have so hot a mind t' her.
 Mean while the Knight was making water,
 Before he fell upon the matter ;
 Which having done, the Wizard steps in,
 To give him suitable reception ; 520
 But kept his bus'ness at a bay
 Till WHACHUM put him in the way ;
 Who having now, by RALPHO's light,
 Expounded th' errand of the Knight,
 And what he came to know, drew near, 525
 To whisper in the Conj'rer's ear,
 Which he prevented thus : What was't,
 Quoth he, that I was saying last,
 Before these gentlemen arriv'd ?
 Quoth WHACHUM, Venus you retriev'd, 530
 In opposition with Mars,
 And no benigne friendly stars

PART II. CANTO III.

193

T' allay the effect.—Quoth Wizard, So !
In Virgo? Ha !—Quoth WHACHUM, No.
Has Saturn nothing to do in it?

533

One-tenth of's circle to a minute.
'Tis well, quoth he.—Sir, you'll excuse
This rudeness I am forc'd to use :

It is a scheme and face of Heaven,
As the aspects are dispos'd this even,

540

I was contemplating upon
When you arriv'd ; but now I've done.

Quoth HUDIBRAS, If I appear
Unseasonable in coming here

At such a time, to interrupt,
Your speculations, which I hop'd
Assistance from, and come to use,

545

'Tis fit that I ask your excuse.

By no means, Sir, quoth SINDROPHIL ;
The stars your coming did foretel :

550

I did expect you here, and knew,
Before you spake, your bus'ness too.

Quoth HUDIBRAS, Make that appear,
And I shall credit whatsoe'er

You tell me after on your word,
Howe'er unlikely, or absurd.

555

You are in love, Sir, with a widow,
Quoth he, that does not greatly heed you,

And for three years has rid your wit
And passion without drawing bit :

560

And now your bus'ness is to know,
If you shall carry her or no.

Quoth HUDIBRAS, You're in the right ;
But how the Devil you came by't

I can't imagine ; for the Stars,

563

Is sure, can tell no more than a horse ;

Nor can their aspects (though you pore
Your eyes out on 'em) tell you more
Than th' oracle of sieve and sheers,
That turns as certain as the spheres:
But if the Devil's of your counsel,
Much may be done my noble Donzel;
And 'tis on his account I come,
To know from you my fatal doom.

Quoth SIDROPHEL, If you suppose,
Sir Knight, that I am one of those,
I might suspect, and take the alarm,
Your bus'ness is but to inform;
But if it be, 'tis ne'er the near;
You have a wrong sow by the ear;
For I assure you, for my part,
I only deal by rules of art,
Such as are lawful, and judge by
Conclusions of Astrology:
But for the Dev'l, know nothing by him;
But only this, that I defy him.

Quoth he, Whatever others deem ye,
I understand your metonymy:
Your words of second-hand intention,
When things by wrongful names you mention
The mystick sense of all your terms,
That are, indeed, but magick charms
To raise the Devil, and mean one thing,
And that is down-right conjuring;
And in itself more warrantable,
Than cheat, or canting to a rabble,
Or putting tricks upon the Moon,
Which by confed'racy are done.
Your ancient conjurers were wont
To make her from her sphere dismount,

And to their incantations stoop :
 They scorn'd to pore thro' telescope,
 Or idly play at bo-peep with her,
 To find out cloudy or fair weather,
 Which ev'ry almanack can tell, 605
 Perhaps, as learnedly and well,
 As you yourself—Then, friend, I doubt
 You go the furthest way about.
■ Your modern Indian magician
 Makes but a hole in th' earth to piss in, 610
 And straight resolves all questions by't,
 And seldom fails to be i' th' right.
 The Rosy-Crucian way's more sure
 To bring the Devil to the lure ;
 Each of 'em has a sev'ral gin 615
 To catch intelligences in.
 Some by the nose with fumes trepan 'em,
 As **DUNSTAN** did the Devil's grannam ;
 Others, with characters and words,
 Catch 'em, as men in nets do birds ; 620
 And some with symbols, signs, and tricks,
 Engrav'd with planetary nicks,
 With their own influences will fetch 'em
 Down from their orbs, arrest, and catch 'em ;
 Make 'em depose and answer to 625
 All questions e're they let them go.
■ **BUMBASTUS** kept a Devil's bird
 Shot in the pommel of his sword,
 That taught him all the cunning pranks
 Of past and future mountebanks. 630
KELLY did all his seats upon
 The Devil's looking-glass, a stone ;
 Where playing with him at bo-peep,
 He solv'd all problems ne'er so deep.

1 AGRIPPA kept a Stygian pug, 435
 I' th' garb and habit of a dog,
 That was his tutor, and the cur
 Read to th' occult philosopher,
 And taught him subt'ly to maintain
 All other sciences are vain. 640

To this, quoth SIDROPHELLO, Sir,
 AGRIPPA was no conjurer,
 NOR PARACELsus, no, nor BEHMEN;
 Nor was the dog a Cacodæmon,
 But a true dog, that would shew tricks 645
 For th' emperor, and leap o'er sticks;
 Would fetch and carry; was more civil
 Than other dogs, but yet no Devil;
 And whatsoe'er he's said to do,
 He went the self-same way we go. 650
 As for the Rosy-Cross Philosophers,
 Whom you will have to be but sorcerers,
 What they pretend to is no more,
 Than TRISMEGISTUS did before,
 PYTHAGORAS, old ZOROASTER, 635
 And APOLLONIUS their master;
 To whom they do confess they owe
 All that they do, and all they know.

Quoth HUDIBRAS, Alas! what is't t' us,
 Whether 'twas said by TRISMEGISTUS, 660
 If it be nonsense, false, or mystick,
 Or not intelligible, or sophistick?
 'Tis not antiquity, nor author,
 That makes Truth Truth, altho' Time's daughter;
 'Twas he that put her in the pit 665
 Before he pull'd her out of it;
 And as he eats his sons, just so
 He feeds upon his daughters too.

PART II. CANTO III.

199

Nor does it follow, 'cause a herauld,
 Can make a gentleman, scarce a year old, 670
 To be descended of a race
 Of ancient kings in a small space,
 That we should all opinions hold
 Authentic that we can make old.

Quoth SIDROPHEL, It is no part 675
 Of prudence to cry down an art,
 And what it may perform deny,
 Because you understand not why;
 (Ask AVERHOIS play'd but a mean trick
 To damn our whole art for eccentrick :) 680
 For who knows all that knowledge contains?
 Men dwell not on the tops of mountains,

But on their sides, or rising's seat;
 So 'tis with knowledge's vast height.
 Do not the hist'ries of all ages 685
 Relate miraculous presages,
 Of strange turns in the world's affairs,
 Foreseen b' Astrologers, Soothsayers,
 Chaldeans, learn'd Genethliacks,
 And some that have writ almanacks? 690

1 The MEDIAN emp'ror dreamt his daughter
 Had pist all ASIA under water,
 And that a vine, sprung from her haunches,
 O'erspread his empire with its branches:
 And did not soothsayers expound it, 695
 As after by th' event he found it?

m When CÆSAR in the senate fell,
 Did not the sun eclips'd foretel,
 And, in resentment of his slaughter,
 Look'd pale for almost a year after? 700
 n AUGUSTUS having, b' oversight,
 Put on his left shoe 'fore his right, 770

Had like to have been slain that day
 By soldiers mutin'ing for pay.
 Are there not myriads of this sort, 705
 Which stories of all times report?
 Is it not ominous in all countries
 When crows and ravens croak upon trees?
 • The Roman senate, when within
 The city walls an owl was seen, 710
 Did cause their clergy, with lustrations,
 (Our Synod calls humiliations),
 The round-fac'd prodigy t'avert
 From doing town or country hurt :
 And if an owl have so much pow'r, 715
 Why should not planets have much more,
 That in a region far above
 Inferior fowls of the air move,
 And should see further, and foreknow
 More than their augury below ? 720
 Though that once serv'd the polity
 Of mighty states to govern by ;
 And this is what we take in hand
 By pow'rful art to understand ;
 Which, how we have perform'd, all ages 725
 Can speak th' events of our presages
 Have we not lately, in the Moon,
 Found a New World, to the Old unknown ?
 Discover'd sea and land. COLUMBUS
 And MAGELLAN cou'd never compass ? 730
 Made mountains with our tubes appear,
 And cattle grazing on 'em there?
 Quoth HUDIBRAS, You lie so ope,
 That I, without a telescope,
 And find your tricks out, and descry 735
 He feed you tell truth, and where you lye :

For P ANAXAGORAS, long ago,
 Saw hills, as well as you, i' th' Moon ;
 And held the Sun was but a piece
 Of red-hot ir'n, as big as Greece ; 740
 Believ'd the Heav'ns were made of stone,
 Because the Sun had voided one ;
 And, rather than he would recant
 Th' opinion, suffer'd banishment.

But what, alas ! is it to us, 745
 Whether i' th' Moon men thus or thus
 Do eat their porridge, cut their corns,
 Or whether they have tails or horns ?
 What trade from thence can you advance,
 But what we nearer have from France ? 750
 What can our travellers bring home,
 That is not to be learnt at Rome ?
 What politicks, or strange opinions,
 That are not in our own dominions ?
 What science can be brought from thence, 755
 In which we do not here commence ?
 What revelations, or religions,
 That are not in our native regions ?
 Are sweating lanthorns, or screen-fans,
 Made better there than th' are in France ? 760
 Or do they teach to sing and play
 O' th' gittar there a newer way ?
 Can they make plays there, that shall fit
 The public humour, with less wit ?
 Write wittier dances, quainter shows, 765
 Or fight with more ingenious blows ?
 Or does the man i' th' moon look big,
 And wear a huger perriwig,
 Shew in his gait or face more tricks,
 Than our own native lunaticks ? 770

And if w' out-do him here at home,
 What good of your design can come ?
 As wind i' th' hypocondries pent,
 Is but a blast if downward sent,
 But if it upward chance to fly, 775
 Becomes new Light and Prophecy ;
 So when your speculations tend
 Above their just and useful end,
 Although they promise strange and great
 Discoveries of things far set, 780
 They are but idle dreams and fancies,
 And savour strongly of the ganzas.
 Tell me but what's the natural cause,
 Why on a sign no painter draws
 The full moon ever, but the half ; 785
 Resolve that with your JACON's staff ;
 Or why wolves raisé a hubbub at her,
 And dogs howl when she shines in water ;
 And I shall freely give my vote,
 You may know something more remote. 790
 At this deep SIDROPHEL look'd wise,
 And staring round with owl-like eyes,
 He put his face into a posture
 Of sapience, and began to bluster :
 For having three times shook his head 795
 To stir his wit up, thus he said :
 Art has no mortal enemies,
 Next ignorance, but owls and geese ;
 Those consecrated geese in orders,
 That to the Capitol were warders ; 800
 And being then upon patrol,
 With noise alone beat off the Gaul :
 Or those Athenian Sceptic owls,
That will not credit their own souls ;

PART II. CANTO III.

203

Or any science understand, 805
 Beyond the reach of eye or hand;
 But meas'ring all things by their own
 Knowledge, hold nothing's to be known :
 Those wholesale criticks, that in coffee-
 Houses cry down all philosophy, 810
 And will not know upon what ground
 In nature we our doctrine found,
 Altho' with pregnant evidence
 We can demonstrate it to sense,
 As I just now have done to you, 815
 Foretelling what you came to know.
 Were the stars only made to light
 Robbers and burglars by night ?
 To wait on drunkards, thieves, gold-finders,
 And lovers solacing behind doors, 820
 Or giving one another pledges
 Of matrimony under hedges ?
 Or witches simpling, and on gibbets
 Cutting from malefactors snippers ?
 Or from the pillory tips of ears 825
 Of Rebel-Saints and perjurers ?
 Only to stand by, and look on,
 But not know what is said or done ?
 Is there a constellation there,
 That was not born and bred up here ? 830
 And therefore cannot be to learn
 In any inferior concern.
 Were they not, during all their lives,
 Most of 'em pirates, whores and thieves ;
 And is it like they have not still 835
 In their old practices some skill ?
 Is there a planet that by birth
 Does not derive its house from earth ?

And therefore probably must know,
 What is and hath been done below. 840
 Who made the Balance, or whence came
 The Bull, the Lion, and the Ram?
 Did not we here the Argo rig,
 Make BERENICE's periwig?
 Whose liv'ry does the Coachman wear? 845
 Or who made Cassiopeia's chair?
 And therefore, as they came from hence,
 With us may hold intelligence.
 PLATO deny'd the world can be
 Govern'd without geometree, 850
 (For money b'ing the common scale
 Of things by measure, weight, and tale,
 In all th' affairs of Church and State,
 'Tis both the balance and the weight;)
 Then much less can it be without 855
 Divine Astrology made out;
 That puts the other down in worth,
 As far as Heav'n's above the earth.
 These reasons (quoth the Knight) I grant
 Are something more significant 860
 Than any that the learned use
 Upon this subject to produce;
 And yet th' are far from satisfactory,
 T' establish and keep up your factory.
 ¶ Th' Egyptians say, the Sun has twice 865
 Shifted his setting and his rise;
 'Twice has he risen in the west,
 As many times set in the east;
 But whether that be true or no,
 The Dev'l any of you know. 870
 ¶ Some hold the heavens like a top,
 And kept by circulation up;

PART II. CANTO III.

205

And, were't not for their wheeling round,
They'd instantly fall to the ground :
As sage EMPEDOCLES of old,
And from him modern authors hold.
* PLATO believ'd the Sun and Moon
Below all other Planets run.

875

Some MERCURY, some VENUS, seat
Above the Sun himself in height.

880

* The learned SCALIGER complain'd,
'Gainst what COPERNICUS maintain'd,
That, in twelve hundred years and odd,
The Sun had left its ancient road,
And nearer to the earth is come

885

'Bove fifty thousand miles from home :
Swore 'twas a most notorious sham ;

And he that had so little shame
To vent such fopperies abroad,

Deserv'd to have his rump well claw'd ;
Which Monsieur BOBIN hearing, swore

890

That he deserv'd the rod much more,
That durst upon a truth give doom,
He knew less than the Pope of Rome.

* CARDAN believ'd great states depend
Upon the tip o' th' Bear's tail's end ;

895

That, as she whisk'd it t'wards the Sun,
Strow'd mighty empires up and down ;
Which others say must needs be false,
Because your true bears have no tails.

900

Some say the Zodiack Constellations
Have long since chang'd their antique stations
Above a sign, and prove the same

In Taurus now once in the Ram ;
Affirm the trigon chop'd and chang'd,

905

The wat'ry with the fiery rang'd :

Then how can their effects still hold
 To be the same they were of old?
 This, though the art were true, would make
 Our modern soothsayers mistake : 910
 And in one cause they tell more lies,
 In figures and nativities,
 Than th' old w Chaldean conjurers
 In so many hundred thousand years ;
 Beside their nonsense in translating, 915
 For want of accidence and Latin,
 Like Idus, and Calendæ, English
 The quarter-days by skilful linguist ;
 And yet with canting, sleight and cheat,
 'Twill serve their turn to do the feat ; 920
 Make fools believe in their foreseeing
 Of things before they are in being ;
 To swallow gudgeons ere th' are catch'd ;
 And count their chickens ere th' are hatch'd ;
 Make them the constellations prompt, 925
 And give 'em back their own account ;
 But still the best to him that gives
 The best price for't, or best believes.
 Some towns and cities, some, for brevity,
 Have cast the 'versal world's nativity, 930
 And made the infant-stars confess,
 Like fools or children, what they please.
 Some calculate the hidden fates
 Of monkeys, puppy-dogs, and cats :
 Some running-nags and fighting cocks, 935
 Some love, trade, law-suits, and the pox ;
 Some take a measure of the lives
 Of fathers, mothers, husbands, wiver ;
 Make opposition, trine, and quartile,
 Tell who is barren, and who fertile. 940

As if the planet's first aspect
 The tender infant did infect
 In soul and body, and instill
 All future good, and future ill ;
 Which, in their dark fatalities lurking, 945
 At destin'd periods fall a working ;
 And break out, like the hidden seeds
 Of long diseases, into deeds,
 In friendships, enmities, and strife,
 And all the emergencies of life. 950
 No sooner does he peep into
 The world, but he has done his do ;
 Catch'd all diseases, took all physick
 That cures or kills a man that is sick ;
 Marry'd his punctual dose of wives ; 955
 Is cuckolded, and breaks or thrives.
 There's but the twinkling of a star
 Between a man of peace and war ;
 A thief and justice, fool and knave,
 A huffing officer and a slave ; 960
 A crafty lawyer and a pick-pocket,
 A great philosopher and a blockhead ;
 A formal preacher and a player,
 A learn'd physician and manslayer.
 As if men from the stars did suck 965
 Old age, diseases, and ill-luck,
 Wit, folly, honour, virtue, vice,
 Trade, travel, women, claps, and dice ;
 And draw, with the first air they breathe,
 Battle and murder, sudden death. 970
 Are not these fine commodities
 To be imported from the skies,
 And vended here amongst the rabble,
 For staple goods and warrantable ?

× Like money by the Druids borrow'd, 975
In th' other world to be restor'd ?

Quoth SIDROPHEL, To let you know
You wrong the art, and artists too,
Since arguments are lost on those
That do our principles opposte, 980

I will (although I've done't before)
Demonstrate to your sense once more,
And draw a figure, that shall tell you
What you, perhaps, forget befel you,
By way of horary inspection, 985

Which some account our worst erection.
With that he circles draws, and squares,
With cyphers, astral characters ;
Then looks 'em o'er, to understand 'em,
Although set down hab-nab, at random. 990

Quoth he, This scheme of th' heavens set,
Discovers how in fight you met
At Kingston with a may-pole idol,
And that y' were bang'd both back and side well ;
And though you overcame the bear, 995
The dogs beat you at Brentford fair ;
Where sturdy butchers broke your noddle,
And handled you like a fop-doodle.

Quoth HUDIBRAS, I now perceive
You are no conj'rer, by your leave : 1000
That y' poultry story is untrue,
And forg'd to cheat such galls as you.

Not true ? quoth he ; howe'er you vapour,
I can what I affirm make appear.
WHACHUM shall justify't t' your face, 1005
And prove he was upon the place.
He play'd the Saltimbanchos part,
Transform'd t' a Frenchman by my art :

PART II. CANTO III.

209

He stole your cloak, and pick'd your pocket,
Chows'd and caldes'd ye like a blockhead : 1010

And what you lost I can produce,
If you deny it, here i' th' house.

Quoth HUDIBRAS, I do believe
That argument's demonstrative.
RALPHO, bear witness ; and go fetch us 1015

A constable to seize the wretches :
For though th' are both false knaves and cheats,
Impostors, jugglers, counterfeits,
I'll make them serve for perpendiculars
As true as e'er were us'd by bricklayers. 1020

They're guilty, by their own confessions,
Of felony, and at the sessions,
Upon the bench, I will so handle 'em,
That the z vibration of this pendulum
Shall make all taylors yards of one 1025

Unanimous opinion,
A thing he long has vapour'd of,
But now shall make it out of proof.

Quoth SIDROPHEL, I do not doubt
To find friends that will bear me out. 1030

Nor have I hazarded my art,
And neck, so long on the state's part,
To be expos'd i' th' end to suffer
By such a braggadocio huffer.

Huffer ! quoth HUDIBRAS : this sword
Shall down thy false throat cram that word. 1035

RALPHO, make haste, and call an officer,
To apprehend this Stygian sophister,
Meanwhile I'll hold 'em at a bay,
Lest he and WHACHUM run away. 1040

But SIDROPHEL, who, from the aspect
Of HUDIBRAS, did not erect

A figure worse portenting far
 Than that of a malignant star,
 Believ'd it now the fittest moment 1045
 To shun the danger that might come on't,
 While HUDIBRAS was all alone,
 And he and WHACHUM, two to one.
 This being resolv'd, he spy'd, by chance,
 Behind the door, an iron lance, 1050
 That many a sturdy limb had gor'd,
 And legs, and loins, and shoulders bor'd :
 He snatch'd it up, and made a pass,
 To make his way through HUDIBRAS.
 WHACHUM had got a fire-fork, 1055
 With which he vow'd to do his work.
 But HUDIBRAS was well prepar'd,
 And stoutly stood upon his guard :
 He put by SIDROHELLO's thrust,
 And in right manfully he rusht ; 1060
 The weapon from his gripe he wrung,
 And laid him on the earth along.
 WHACHUM his sea-coal prong threw by,
 And basely turn'd his back to fly :
 But HUDIBRAS gave him a twitch 1065
 As quick as light'ning in the breech,
 Just in the place where honour's lodg'd,
 As wise philosophers have judg'd ;
 Because a kick in that place more
 Hurts honour than deep wounds before. 1070
 Quoth HUDIBRAS, The stars determine
 You are my prisoners, base vermine !
 Could they not tell you so as well
 As what I came to know foretell ?
 By this what *cheats* you are we find, 1075
 That in your own concerns are blind.

Your lives are now at my dispose,
 To be redeem'd by fine or blows :
 But who his honour wou'd defile,
 To take or sell two lives so vile? 1089
 I'll give you quarter ; but your pillage,
 The cong'ring warrior's crop and tillage,
 Which with his sword he reaps and plows,
 That's mine, the law of arms allows.
 This said, in haste, in haste he fell 1085
 To rummaging of SIDROPHEL.
 First, he expounded both his pockets,
 And found a watch, with rings and locketts,
 Which had been left with him t' erect
 A figure for, and so detect ; 1090
 A copper-plate, with almanacks
 Engrav'd upon't ; with other knacks,
 Of BOOKER'S LILLY'S, SARAH JIMMERS',
 And blank-schemes to discover nimmers ;
 A moon-dial, with Napier's bones, 1095
 And sev'ral constellation stones,
 Engrav'd in planetary hours,
 That over mortals had strange powers
 To make 'em thrive in law or trade,
 And stab or poison to evade ; 1100
 In wit or wisdom to improve,
 And be victorious in love.
 WHACHUM had neither cross nor pile ;
 His plunder was not worth the while ;
 All which the cong'ror did discompt, 1105
 To pay for curing of his rump.
 But SIDROPHEL, as full of tricks
 As Rota-men of politicks,
 Straight cast about to over-reach
 Th' unwary cong'ror with a fetch, 1110

And make him glad (at least) to quit
 His victory, and fly the pit,
 * Before the Secular Prince of Darkness
 Arriv'd to seize upon his carcass?
 And as a fox, with hot pursuit
 Chac'd thro' a warren, casts about
 To save his credit, and among
 Dead vermin on a gallows hung,
 And while the dogs run underneath,
 Escap'd (by counterfeiting death)
 Not out of cunning, but a train
 Of atoms justling in his brain,
 As learn'd philosophers give out,
 So SIDROPHELLO cast about,
 And fell to's wouted trade again,
 To feign himself in earnest slain:
 First stretch'd out one leg, then another,
 And seeming in his breath to smother
 A broken sigh; quoth he, Where am I,
 Alive or dead? or which way came I,
 Through so immense a space so soon?
 But now I thought myself in th' Moon;
 And that a monster with huge whiskers,
 More formadable than a Switzer's,
 My body through and through had drill'd,
 And WHACHUM by my side had kill'd:
 Had cross-examin'd both our hose,
 And plunder'd all we had to lose.
 Look, there he is; I see him now,
 And feel the place I am run through:
 And there lies WHACHUM by my side
 Stone dead, and in his own blood dy'd.
Oh! Oh! with that he fetch'd a groan,
And fell again into a swoon;

Shut both his eyes, and stopp'd his breath, 1145
And to the life out-acted death ;
That HUDIBRAS, to all appearing,
Believ'd him to be dead as herring.
He held it now no longer safe
To tarry the return of RALPH, 1150
But rather leave him in the lurch :
Thought he, he has abus'd our Church,
Refus'd to give himself one firck
To carry on the publick work ;
Despis'd our Synod-Men like dirt, 1155
And made their discipline his sport ;
Divulg'd the secrets of their classes,
And their conventions prov'd high places ;
Disparag'd their tythe-pigs as Pagan,
And set at nought their cheese and bacon ; 1160
Rail'd at their Covenant, and jeer'd
Their rev'rend parsons, to my beard :
For all which scandals, to be quit
At once, this juncture falls out fit,
I'll make him henceforth to beware, 1165
And tempt my fury, if he dare.
He must at least hold up his hand,
By twelve freeholders to be scann'd ;
Who, by their skill in palmistry,
Will quickly read his destiny ; 1170
And make him glad to read his lesson,
Or take a turn for it at the session ;
Unless his Light and Gifts prove truer
Then ever yet they did, I'm sure ;
For if he 'scape with whipping now, 1175
'Tis more than he can hope to do ;
And that will disengage my conscience
Of th' obligation in his own sense.

I'll make him now by force abide
What he by gentle means deny'd, 1.
To give my honour satisfaction,
And right the Brethren in the action.
This being resolv'd, with equal speed
And conduct he approach'd his steed,
And with activity unwont, 1
Assay'd the lofty beast to mount ;
Which once atchiev'd, he spurr'd his palfrey,
To get from th' enemy, and RALPH, free :
Left dangers, fears, and foes behind,
And beat, at last three lengths, the wind. 1

NOTES TO PART II. CANTO I.

1 *BUT now* = *r' observe, &c.*] The beginning of this

Second Part may perhaps seem strange and abrupt to those who do not know that it was written on purpose in imitation of Virgil, who begins the IVth Book of his *Æneids* in the very same manner, *At Regina gravi, &c.* And this is enough to satisfy the curiosity of those who believe that invention and fancy ought to be measured (like cases in law) by precedents, or else they are in the power of the critic.

205 *b A Saxon Duke, &c.*] This history of the Duke of Saxony is not so strange as that of a Bishop, his countryman, who was quite catch up with rats and mice.

237 *c King Pyrrhus, &c.*] *Pyrrhus*, King of Epirus, as *Pliny* says, had this occult quality in his toe, *Pollicis in dextro Pede tactu Lienosis medebatur*, L. 7. C. 11.

259 *In close* *d Catasta shut, &c.*] *Catasta* is but a pair of Stocks in English. But heroical poetry must not admit of any vulgar word, (especially of paltry signification), and therefore some of our modern authors are fain to import foreign words from abroad, that were never before heard of in our language.

271 *e* The ancient writers of the lives of saints were of the same sort of people who first writ of knight-errantry: and as in the one they rendered the brave actions of some great persons ridiculous, by their prodigious lies, and sottish way of describing them, so they have abused the piety of some devout persons, by imposing such stories on them as this upon *St. Francis*.

393 *This made the beautiful Queen, &c.*] The History of *Pasiphaë* is common enough: only this may be observed, that tho' she brought the bull a son and heir, yet the husband was fain to father it; as appears by the name; perhaps, because being an island, he was within the four seas when the infant was begotten.

338 *g As your own Secretary, &c.*] *Albertus Magnus* was a Swedish Bishop, who wrote a very learned work, *De Secretis Mulierum*.

470 *Unless it be to h squint, &c.] Pliny, in his Natural History, affirms, that Uni animalium homini oculi depravantur, unde Cognomina Strabonum & Pætorum. Lib. 2.*

532 *As Friar i Bacon's Noddle was, &c.] The tradition of Friar Bacon and the Brazen Head is very commonly known; and, considering the times he lived in, is not much more strange than what another great Philosopher of his name has delivered up of a ring, that being tied in a string, and held like a pendulum in the middle of a silver bowl, will vibrate of itself, and tell exactly, against the sides of the divining cup, the same thing with, Time is, Time was, &c.*

533 *k American Indians, among whom (the same authors affirm) there are others, whose skulls are so soft, to use their own words, Ut Digito perforari possunt.*

556 *Or i Oracle, &c.] Jupiter's Oracle in Epirus, near the city of Dodona, Ubi Nemus erat Jovi sacrum, Querneum totum, in quo Jovis Dodonæi templum fuisse narratur.*

715 *l Semiramis, Queen of Assyria, is said to be the first that invented Eunuchs. Semiramis teneros mares castravit omnium prima. Am. Marcel. L. 34. p. 12. Which is something strange in a lady of her constitution, who is said to have received horses into her embraces; but that, perhaps, may be the reason why she afterwards thought men not worth the while.*

725 *For some m Philosophers, &c.] Sir K. D. in his Book of Bodies, who has this story of the German Boy, which he endeavours to make good by several natural reasons; by which those who have the dexterity to believe what they please, may be fully satisfied of the probability of it.*

845 *A n Persian Emperor, &c.] Xerxes, who used to whip the seas and wind. In Corum atque Eurum solitus saevire Flagellis. Juv. Sat. 19.*

NOTES TO PART II: CANTO II.

15 ⁿ *So th' ancient Stoicks, &c.]* In Porticu (Stoicorum Schola Athenis) Discipulorum seditionibus mille Quingenti triginta Civis interfecti sunt. Diog. Laert. in vita Zenonis, p. 383. Those old Virtuosos were better proficient in those exercises than modern, who seldom improve higher than cuffing and kicking.

19 ^o *Bonum* is such a kind of animal as our modern Virtuosi from *Don Quixote* will have windmills under sail to be. The same authors are of opinion, that all ships are fishes while they are afloat; but when they are run on ground, & laid up in the dock, become ships again.

413 ^p *In a town, &c.]* The history of the Cobbler had been attested by persons of good credit, who were upon the place when it was done.

548 ^s *Have been exchange'd, &c.]* The Knight was kept prisoner in Exeter, and, after several exchanges proposed, but none accepted of, was at last released for a barrel of ale, as he often used to declare.

678 ⁱ *Bore a slave with him in his chariot.*

————— *Et sibi Consul*

Me placuit, curru verius portatur eodem.

683 ^s *Hung out, &c.]* Tunica Coccinea solchat prælie quam dimicandum esset, supra prætorium poni, quasi admonitio, & indicium future pugne. Lipsius in Tacit. p. 36.

687 ^t *Next Links, &c.]* That the Roman Emperors were wont to have torches borne before them by day, in publick, appears by *Herodian in Pertinace. Lips. in Tacit. p. 16.*

879 ^u *Vespasian being darob'd, &c.]* C. Cæsar succensens, propter curam, veprendis viis non adhibitam, Luto jussit oppleri congesto per milites in prætextæ sinum. Sueton. in Vespas. C. 3.

NOTES TO PART II. CANTO III.

140 *A w Ledger, &c.*] The Witch-finder in Suffolk, who, in the Presbyterian times, had a commission to discover witches, of whom (right or wrong) he caused 60 to be hanged within the compass of one year; and, among the rest, the old minister, who had been a painful preacher for many years.

159 *Did he not help the x Dutch, &c.*] In the beginning of the Civil Wars of Flanders, the common people of Antwerp in a tumult broke open the cathedral church, to demolish images and shrines, and did so much mischief in a small time, that *Strada* writes, there were several Devils seen very busy among them, otherwise it had been impossible.

161 *y Sing catches, &c.*] This Devil at Mascon delivered all his oracles, like his forefathers, in verse, which he sung to tunes. He made several lampoons upon the Hugonots, and foretold them many things which afterwards came to pass; as may be seen in his Memoirs, written in French.

163 *z Appear'd in divers, &c.*] The History of Dr. Dee and the Devil, published by *Mer. Casaubon, Isaac Fil.* Prebendary of Canterbury, has a large account of all those passages, in which the stile of the true and false angels appears to be penned by one and the same person. The Nun of Loudon, in France, and all her tricks, have been seen by many persons of quality of this nation yet living, who have made very good observations upon the French book written on that occasion.

165 *a Met with, &c.*] A Committee of the Long Parliament, sitting in the King's-house in Woodstock-Park, were terrified with several apparitions, the particulars whereof were then the news of the whole nation.

157 *b At Sarum, &c.*] *Withers* has a long story, in doggerel, of a soldier in the King's army, who, being a prisoner at Salisbury, and drinking a health

to the Devil upon his knees, was carried away by him through a single pane of glass.

224 *Since old c* Hodge Bacon, &c.] *Roger Bacon*, commonly called *Friar Bacon*, lived in the reign of our *Edward I.* and, for some little skill he had in the mathematicks, was by the rabble accounted a conjurer, and had the sottish story of the *Brazen Head* fathered upon him by the ignorant Monks of those days. *Robert Grossthead* was Bishop of *Lincoln* in the reign of *Henry III.* He was a learned man for those times, and for that reason suspected by the Clergy to be a conjurer; for which crime, being degraded by *Pope Innocent IV.* and summoned to appear at *Rome*, he appealed to the tribunal of *Christ*; which our lawyers say is illegal, if not a *Præmunire*, for offering to sue in a *Foreign Court*.

513 *Which d* Socrates, &c.] *Aristophanes*, in his Comedy of the *Clouds*, brings in *Socrates* and *Cherephon*, measuring the leap of a flea from the one's beard to the other's.

404 *c* *Was rais'd by him, &c.*] This *Fisk* was a late famous astrologer, who flourished about the time of *Subtile* and *Face*, and was equally celebrated by *Ben Jonson*.

436 *c* *Unless is be, &c.*] This experiment was tried by some foreign *Virtuosos*, who planted a piece of ordnance point-blank against the *Zenith*, and having fired it, the bullet never rebounded back again; which made them all conclude that it sticks in the mark: but *Des Cartes* was of opinion, that it does but hang in the air.

477 *f* *As lately 't was, &c.*] This *Sedgwick* had many persons (and some of quality) that believed in him, and prepared to keep the day of judgment with him, but were disappointed; for which the false prophet was afterwards called by the name of *Dooms-day Sedgwick*.

600. *Your modern Indian, &c.*] This new way of magick is affirmed by Mons^r en (in his travels) to be used in the East Indie
607. *Bambastus kept, &c.*] *Paracelsus* have kept a small Devil prisoner in the hilt of his sword, which was the reason, perhaps, he was so valiant in his drink. However, a better purpose than *Hannibal* carried poison in his sword, if he should happen to be in any great extremity; for the sword would do the feat alone much better, and more speedily, and it was below the honour of so great a captain to go out of the world like a rat.

635. *Agrippa kept, &c.*] *Cornelius Agrippa* the dog that was suspected to be a spirit, for he was wont to do beyond the capacity of it was thought; but the author of *Magia* has taken a great deal of pains to vindicate the dog from the aspersion, in has shewn a very great respect and kindness both.

679. *As & Averrhois, &c.*] *Averrhois* *propter Excentricos contempsit.* Phil. Mel. Elem. Phil. p. 781.

691. *The Median Emp'r'or dreamt his Daughter Attyages, King of Media, had this dream of her Madam, and the interpretation from it was, that she should marry a Persian of a nobility, by whom she had Cyrus, who conquered and translated the empire from the Medes to the Persians.* Herodot. l. 1.

697. *When Cæsar, &c.*] *Fiunt aliquando, & longiores Solis Defectus. quales occurrunt in Dictatore & Antoniana Bello, totius Anni Finis.* Phil.

701. *Augustus having, &c.*] *Dixit Aliquid sibi prodidit calceum præpostere idutum. seditione Militum prope afflicto.* Idem.

709 ° *The Roman Senate, &c.] Romani L. Crasso & C. Mario Coss. Bubone viso orbem lustrabant.*

737 For P *Anaxagoras, &c.] Anaxagoras affirmabat Solem candens Ferrum esse, & Peloponneso majorem : Lunam Habitacula in se habere, & Colles, & Valles. Fertur dixisse Cælum omne ex Lapidibus esse compositum ; Damnatuſ & in exilium pulsus est, quod impie Solem candentem luminam esse dixisset, Diog. Laert. in Anaxag. p. 11, 13.*

865 q *Th' Egyptians say, &c.] Egyptii decem millia Annorum & amplius recensent ; & observatum est in hoc tanto Spatio, bis mutata esse Loca Ortuum & Occasuum Solis, ita ut Sol bis ortus sit ubi nunc occidit, & bis descenderit ubi nunc oritur. Phil. Melanct. Lib. 1. Pag. 60.*

871 r *Some hold the heavens, &c.] Causa quare Cælum non cadit (secundum Empedoclem) est velocitas sui motus. Comment. in L. 2. Aristot. de Cælo.*

877 s *Plato believ'd, &c.] Plato Solem & Lunam cæteris Planetis inferiores esse putavit. G. Gunnin in Cosmog. L. 1. p. 11.*

881 t *The learned Scaliger, &c.] Copernicus in Libris Revolutionem, deinde Reinholdus, post etiam Stadius Mathematici nobiles perspicuis Demonstrationibus docuerunt, solis Apsida Terris esse propiorem, quam Ptolemæi ætate duodecim partibus, i. e. uno & triginta terræ semidiametris. Jo. Bod. Met. Hist. p. 455.*

895 u *Cardan believ'd, &c.] Putat Cardanus, ab extrema Cauda Halices seu Majoris Ursæ omne magnum Imperium pendere. Idem. p. 325.*

913 w *Than th' old Chaldean, &c.] Chaldæi jactant se quadringenta septuaginta Annorum millia in periclitandis, experiundisque Puerorum Animis possuisse. Cicero.*

975 x *Like Money, &c.] Druidæ pecuniam mutuo accipiebant in posteriore vita reddituri. Patricius Tom. 2. p. 9.*

1001 *Y That paltry story, &c.*] There was a notorious ideot (that is here described by the name and character of *Whachum*) who counterfeited a Second Part of *Hudibras*, as untowardly as Captain *Po*, who could not write himself, and yet made a shift to stand on the pillory for forging other mens' hands, as his fellow *Whachum* no doubt deserved: in whose abominable doggrel this story of *Hudibras* and a French mountebank at Brentford fair is as properly described.

1024 *That the z Vibration, &c.*] The device of the vibration of a *Pendulum* was intended to settle a certain measure of ells and yards, &c. (that should have its foundation in nature) all the world over: For by swinging a weight at the end of a string, and calculating by the motion of the sun, or any star, how long the vibration would last, in proportion to the length of the string, and weight of the pendulum, they thought to reduce it back again, and from any part of time compute the exact length of any string that must necessarily vibrate into so much space of time; so that if a man should ask in China for a quarter of an hour of satin, or taffata, they would know perfectly what it meant; and all mankind learn a new way to measure things no more by the yard, foot, or inch, but by the hour, quarter, and minute.

1113 *a Before the Secular, &c.*] As the Devil is the Spiritual Prince of Darkness, so is the Constable the Secular, who governs in the night with as great authority as his colleague, but far more imperiously.

AN HEROICAL EPISTLE OF
HUDIBRAS TO SIDROPHEL.

Ecce iterum Crispinus.—

WELL! SIDROPHEL, though 'tis in vain
To tamper with your crazy brain,
Without trepanning of your skull
As often as the moon's at full;
'Tis not amiss, e're y' are giv'n o'er, 5
To try one desp'rate med'cine more:
For where your case can be no worse,
The desp'rat'st is the wisest course.
Is't possible that you, whose ears
Are of the tribe of Issachar's, 10
And might (with equal reason) either,
For merit, or extent of leather,
With WILLIAM PRYNN's, before they were
Retrench'd and crucify'd, compare,
Shou'd yet be deaf against a noise 15
So roaring as the publick voice?
That speaks your virtues free, and loud,
And openly, in ev'ry crowd,
As loud as one that sings his part
T' a wheel-barrow or turnip-cart, 20
Or your new nick-nam'd old invention
To cry green-hastings with an engine;
(As if the vehemence had stunn'd,
And turn your drum-heads with the sound;)
And 'cause your folly's now no news, 25
But overgrown, and out of use,
Persuade yourself there's no such matter,
But that 'tis vanish'd out of nature;

When folly, as it grows in years,
 The more extravagant appears ; 30
 For who but you could be possest
 With so much ignorance, and beast,
 That neither all mens' scorn and hate,
 Nor being laugh'd and pointed at,
 Nor bray'd so often in a mortar, 35
 Can teach you wholesome sense and nurture ;
 But (like a reprobate) what course
 Soever's us'd, grow worse and worse ?
 Can no transfusion of the blood,
 That makes fools cattle, do you good ? 40
 Nor putting pigs t' a bitch to nurse,
 To turn 'em into mungrel-curs,
 Put you into a way, at least,
 To make yourself a better beast ?
 Can all your critical intrigues 45
 Of trying sound from rotten eggs ;
 Your several new-found remedies
 Of curing wounds and scabs in trees ;
 Your arts of fluxing them for claps,
 And purging their infected saps ; 50
 Recov'ring shankers, crystallines,
 And nodes and botches in their rinds,
 Have no effect to operate
 Upon that duller block, your pate ?
 But still it must be lewdly bent 55
 To tempt your own due punishment ;
 And, like your whymsey'd chariots, draw,
 The boys to course you without law ;
 As if the art you have so long
 Profess'd, of making old dogs young, 60
In you had virtue to renew
Not only youth, but childhood . . .

Can you that understand all books,
 By judging only with your looks,
 Resolve all problems with your face, 65
 As others do with B's and A's;
 Unriddle all that mankind knows
 With solid bending of your brows;
 All arts and sciences advance,
 With screwing of your countenance, 70
 And, with a penetrating eye,
 Into th' abstrusest learning pry?
 Know more of any trade b' a hint,
 Than those that have been bred up in't;
 And yet have no art, true or false, 75
 To help your own bad naturals;
 But still, the more you strive t' appear,
 Are found to be the wretchered:
 For fools are known by looking wise,
 As men find woodcocks by their eyes. 80
 Hence 'tis that 'cause y' have gain'd o' th' college
 A quarter share (at most) of knowledge,
 And brought in none, but spent repute,
 Y' assume a pow'r as absolute
 To judge, and censure, and controul, 85
 As if you were the sole Sir Poll;
 And saucily pretend to know
 More than your dividend comes to.
 You'll find the thing will not be done
 With ignorance and face alone: 90
 No, though y' have purchas'd to your name,
 In history, so great a fame;
 That now your talents, so well known,
 For having all belief out-grown,
 That ev'ry strange prodigious tale 95
 Is measur'd by your German scale;

AN HEROICAL EPISTLE, &c.

which the virtuosi try
 magnitude of ev'ry lye,
 t up to what it does amount,
 I place the bigg'st to your account ? 100
 t all those stories that are laid
 truly to you, and those made,
 now still charg'd upon your score,
 I lesser authors nam'd no more.
 s ! that faculty betrays 105
 se soonest it designs to raise ;
 I all your vain renown will spoil,
 guns o'ercharg'd the more recoil.
 ough he that has but impudence,
 all things has a fair pretence ; 110
 I put among his wants but shame,
 all the world may lay his claim :
 ough you have try'd that nothing's borne
 h greater ease than public scorn,
 t all affronts do still give place 115
 your impenetrable face,
 t makes your way through all affairs,
 igs through hedges creep with theirs ;
 as 'tis counterfeit, and brass,
 must not think 'twill always pass ; 120
 all impostors, when th'yre known,
 past their labour, and undone.
 I all the best that can befall
 artificial natural,
 at which madmen find as soon 125
 once they're broke loose from the moon,
 b, proof against her influence,
 pse to e'er so little sense,
 rn stark fools, and subjects fit
 ort of boys, and rabble-wit. 130



[The following text is extremely faint and illegible due to the quality of the scan. It appears to be a single column of text, possibly a list or a series of paragraphs, but no specific words or structures can be discerned.]



HUDIBRAS.

PART III.

CANTO I.

THE ARGUMENT.

The Knight and Squire resolve, at once,
The one the other to renounce.
They both approach the Lady's Bower;
The Squire t' inform, the Knight to woo her.
She treats them with a Masquerade,
By Furies and Hobgoblins made;
From which the Squire conveys the Knight,
And steals him from himself, by Night.

TIS true, no lover has that pow'r
T' enforce a desperate amour,
As he that has two strings t' his bow,
And burns for love and money too;
For then he's brave and resolute,
Disdains to render in his suit,
Has all his flames and raptures double,
And hangs or drowns with half the trouble;
While those who sillily pursue,
The simple, downright way, and true,
Make as unlucky applications,
And steer against the stream their passions.

Some forge their mistresses of stars;
 And when the ladies prove averse,
 And a more untoward to be won 15
 Than by CATIGULA the Moon,
 Cry out upon the stars, for doing
 Ill offices to cross their wooing;
 When only by themselves they're kindred,
 For trusting those they made her kindred; 20
 And still, the harsher and hilder-bounder
 The damsels prove, become the tender.
 For what mad lover ever dy'd
 To gain a soft and gentle bride?
 Or for a lady tender-hearted, 25
 In purling streams or hemp departed?
 Leap'd headlong int' Elysium,
 Through th' windows of a dazzling room?
 But for some cross, ill-natur'd dame,
 The am'rous fly, burnt in his flame. 30
 'This to the Knight could be no news,
 With all mankind so much in use;
 Who therefore took the wiser course,
 To make the most of his amours,
 Resolv'd to try all sorts of ways, 35
 As follows in due time and place.
 No sooner was the bloody flight,
 Between the Wizard and the Knight,
 With all th' appurtenances, over,
 But he relaps'd again t' a lover; 40
 As he was always wont to do,
 When h' had discomfited a foe;
 And us'd the only antique ^bphilters,
 Deriv'd from old heroic tilters.
 But now triumphant, and victorious, 45
 He held th' achievement was too glorious

PART III. CANTO I.

229

For such a conqueror to meddle
 With petty constable or beadle ;
 Or fly for refuge to the Hostess
 Of th' Inns of Court and Chancery, Justice ; 50
 Who might, perhaps, reduce his cause
 To th' ordeal trial of the laws ;
 Where none escape, but such as branded
 With red-hot irons have past bare-handed ;
 And, if they cannot read one verse 55
 I' th' Psalms, must sing it, and that's worse.
 He therefore judging it below him,
 To tempt a shackle the Devil might owe him,
 Resolv'd to leave the Squire for bail
 And mainprize for him to the gaol, 60
 To answer, with his vessel, all
 That might disastrously befall ;
 And thought it now the fittest juncture
 To give the Lady a rencounter ;
 To acquaint her with his expedition, 65
 And conquest o'er the fierce Magician ;
 Describe the manner of the fray,
 And show the spoils he brought away ;
 His bloody scourging aggravate ;
 The number of his blows, and weight ; 70
 All which might probably succeed,
 And gain belief h' had done the deed ;
 Which he resolv'd t' enforce, and spare
 No pawning of his soul to swear ;
 But, rather than produce his back, 75
 To set his conscience on the rack ;
 And in pursuance of his urging
 Of articles perform'd and scourging,
 And all things else, upon his part,
 Demand deliv'ry of her heart, 80

Her goods, and chattels, and good graces,
And person up to his embraces.

Thought he, the ancient errant knights
Won all their ladies hearts in fights ;

And cut whole giants into fritters,

23

To put them into amorous twitters ;

Whose stubborn bowels scorn'd to yield

Until their gallants were half kill'd :

But when their bones were drub'd so sore

They durst not woo one combat more,

29

The ladies hearts began to melt,

Subdu'd by blows their lovers felt.

So d Spanish heroes, with their lances,

At once wound bulls and ladies' fancies ;

And he acquires the noblest spouse

35

That widows greatest herds of cows :

Then what may I expect to do,

Wh' have quell'd so vast a buffalo?

Mean while, the Squire was on his way

The Knight's late orders to obey ;

100

Who sent him for a strong detachment

Of beaules, constables, and watchmen,

T' attack the cunning-man for plunder,

Committed falsly on his lumber ;

When he, who had so lately sack'd

105

The enemy, had done the fact ;

Had rifled all his pokes and fobs

Of gimcracks, whims, and jiggumbobs,

Which he, by hook or crook, had gather'd,

And for his own inventions father'd :

110

And when they should, at gaol delivery,

Unriddle one another's thievery,

Both might have evidence enough,

To render neither halter proof.

PART III. CANTO I.

231

He thought it desperate to tarry, 115

And venture to be accessory ;

But rather wisely slip his fetters,

And leave them for the Knight, his betters.

He call'd to mind th' unjust, foul play

He wou'd have offer'd him that day, 120

To make him curry his own hide,

Which no beast ever did beside,

Without all possible evasion,

But of the riding dispensation ;

And therefore much about the hour 125

The Knight (for reasons told before)

Resolv'd to leave them to the fury

Of Justice, and an unpack'd Jury,

The Squire concurr'd t' abandon him,

And serve him in the self-same trim ; 130

T' acquaint the Lady what h' had done,

And what he meant to carry on ;

What project 'twas he went about,

When SIDROPHEL and he fell out ;

His firm and stedfast resolution, 135

To swear her to an execution ;

To pawn his inward ears to marry her,

And bribe the Devil himself to carry her ;

In which both dealt, as if they meant

Their Party-Saints to represent, 140

Who never fail'd upon their sharing

In any prosperous arms-bearing,

To lay themselves out, to supplant

Each other Cousin-German Saint.

But, ere the Knight could do his part, 145

The Squire had got so much the start,

H' had to the Lady done his errand,

And told her all his tricks afore-hand.

Just as he finish'd his report,
The Knight alighted in the court; 150

And having ty'd his beast t' a pale,
And taking time for both to stale,
He put his hand and beard in order,
The sprucer to accost and board her;
And now began t' approach the door, 155

When she, wh' had spy'd him out before,
Convey'd th' informer out of sight,
And went to entertain the Knight;
With whom encount'ring, after longees
Of humble and submissive congees, 160
And all due ceremonies paid,

He strok'd his beard, and thus he said :

Madam, I do, as is my duty,
Honour the shadow of your shoe-tye;
And now am come to bring your ear 165
A present you'll be glad to hear :

At least I hope so : the thing's done,
Or may I never see the sun ;
For which I humbly now demand
Performance at your gentle hand ; 170
And that you'd please to do your part,

As I have done mine, to my smart.

With that he shrugg'd his sturdy back,
As if he felt his shoulders ake.

But she, who well enough knew what 175
(Before he spoke) he would be at,
Pretended not to apprehend

The mystery of what he mean'd ;
And therefore wish'd him to expound
His dark expressions, less profound. 180

Madam, quoth he, I come to prove
How much I've suffer'd for your love,

PART III. CANTO I.

233

Which (like your votary) to win,
I have not spar'd my tatter'd skin;
And for those meritorious lashes,
To claim your favour and good graces.

183

Quoth she, I do remember once
I freed you from th' enchanted sconce;
And that you promis'd, for that favour,
To bind your back to good behaviour,
And, for my sake and service, vow'd
To lay upon't a heavy load,

190

And what 'twould bear t' a scruple prove,
As other Knights do oft make love;
Which, whether you have done or no,
Concerns yourself, not me, to know.
But if you have, I shall confess,
Y' are houerster than I could guess.

195

Quoth he, If you suspect my troth,
I cannot prove it but by oath;
And if you make a question on't,
I'll pawn my soul that I have done't;
And he that makes his soul his surety,
I think, does give the best security.

200

Quoth she, Some say, the soul's secure
Against distress and forfeiture;
Is free from action, and exempt
From execution and contempt;
And to be summon'd to appear
In th' other world's illegal here;
And therefore few make any account
Int' what incumbrances they run't:

205

For most men carry things so even
Between this World, and Hell, and Heaven,
Without the least offence to either,
They freely deal in all together;

210

215

And equally abhor to quit
 This world for both, or both for it;
 And when they pawn and damn their souls,
 They are but pris'ners on paroles.

226

For that (quoth he) 'tis rational,
 Th' may be accountable in all:
 For when there is that intercourse
 Between divine and human pow'rs,
 That all that we determine here
 Commands obedience every where,
 When penalties may be commuted
 For fines or ears, and executed,
 It follows, nothing binds so fast
 As souls in pawn and mortgage past:
 For oaths are th' only tests and seals
 Of right and wrong, and true and false;
 And there's no other way to try
 The doubts of law and justice by.

225

230

(Quoth she) What is it you would swear?
 There's no believing till I hear;
 For, till they're understood, all tales
 (Like nonsense) are not true nor false.

235

(Quoth he) When I resolv'd t' obey
 What you commanded th' other day,
 And to perform my exercise,
 (As schools are wont) for your fair eyes,
 T' avoid all scruples in the case,
 I went to do't upon the place.
 But as the Castle is enchanted
 By SIDROPHEL the Witch, and haunted
 With evil spirits, as you know,
 Who took my Squire and me for two,
 Before I'd hardly time to lay
 My weapons by, and disarray,

240

245

250

PART III. CANTO I.

235

I heard a formidable noise,
Loud as the f Stentrophonick voice,
That roar'd far off, Dispatch and strip,
I'm ready with th' infernal whip,
That shall divest thy ribs from skin, 255
To expiate thy ling'ring sin.
Th' hast broken perfidiously thy oath,
And not perform'd thy plighted troth ;
But spar'd thy renegade back,
Where th' hadst so great a prize at stake ; 260
Which now the fates have order'd me
For penance and revenge to flea,
Unless thou presently make haste :
Time is, time was : And there it ceas'd.
With which, though startled, I confess, 265
Yet th' horror of the thing was less
Than th' other dismal apprehension
Of interruption or prevention ;
And therefore, snatching up the rod,
I laid upon my back a load ; 270
Resolv'd to spare no flesh and blood,
To make my word and honour good ;
Till tir'd, and making truce at length,
For new recruits of breath and strength,
I felt the blows still ply'd as fast 275
As if th' had been by g lovers plac'd,
In raptures of platonic lashing,
And chaste contemplative bardashing ;
When facing hastily about,
To stand upon my guard and scout, 280
I found th' infernal Cunning-man,
And th' Under-witch, his CALIBAN,
With scourges (like the Furies) arm'd,
That on my outward quarters storm'd.

In haste I snatch'd my weapon up, 285
 And gave their hellish rage a stop ;
 Call'd thrice upon your name, and fell
 Courageously on SIDROPHEL ;
 Who, now transform'd himself t' a bear,
 Began to roar aloud, and tear ; 290
 When I as furiously press'd on,
 My weapon down his throat to run ;
 Laid hold on him ; but he broke loose,
 And turn'd himself into a goose ;
 Div'd under water, in a pond, 295
 To hide himself from being found.
 In vain I sought him ; but, as soon
 As I perceiv'd him fled and gone,
 Prepar'd with equal haste and rage,
 His Under-sorcerer t' engage. 300
 But bravely scorning to defile
 My sword with feeble blood and vile,
 I judg'd it better from a quick-
 Set hedge to cut a knotted stick,
 With which I furiously laid on 305
 Till, in a harsh and doleful tone,
 It roar'd, O hold for pity, Sir :
 I am too great a sufferer,
 Abus'd, as you have been, b' a witch,
 But conjur'd into a worse caprich ; 310
 Who sends me out on many a jaunt,
 Old houses in the night to haunt,
 For opportunities t' improve
 Designs of thievery or love ;
 With drugs convey'd in drink or meat, 315
 All feats of witches counterfeit ;
Kill pigs and geese with powder'd glass,
And make it for enchantment pass ;

PART III. CANTO I.

237

With cow-itch meazle like a leper,
 And choak^d with fumes of guiney pepper ; 320
 Make leachers and their punks with dewtry,
 Commit fantastical advowtry ;
 Bewitch^d Hermetick-men to run
 Stark staring mad with manicon ;
 Believe mechanick Virtuosi 325
 Can raise 'em mountains in i Porosi ;
 And, sillier than the antick fools,
 Take treasure for a heap of coals :
 Seek out for plants with signatures,
 To quack of universal cures : 330
 With figur'd ground on panes of glass
 Make people on their heads to pass ;
 And mighty heaps of coin increase,
 Reflected from a single piece,
 To draw in fools, whose nat^lal itches 335
 Incline perpetually to witches ;
 And keep me in continual fears,
 And danger of my neck and ears ;
 When less delinquents have been scourg'd,
 And hemp on wooden anvil forg'd, 340
 Which others for cravats have worn
 About their necks, and took a turn,
 I pity'd the sad punishment
 The wretched caitiff underwent,
 And left my drubbing of his bones, 345
 Too great an honour for pultrones ;
 For Knights are bound to feel no blows
 From paulty and unequal foes,
 Who, when they slash, and cut to pieces,
 Do all with civillest addresses : 350
 Their horses never give a blow,
 But when they make a leg, and bow.

I therefore spar'd his flesh, and prest him
 About the witch with many a question.
 Quoth he, For many years he drove 355
 A kind of broking-trade in love ;
 Employ'd in all th' intrigues, and trust
 Of feeble, speculative lust :
 Procurer to th' extravagancy,
 And crazy ribaldry of fancy, 360
 By those the Devil had forsook,
 As things below him to provoke.
 But b'ing a virtuoso, able
 To smatter, quack, and cant, and dabble,
 He held his talent most adroit 365
 For any mystical exploit ;
 As others of his tribe had done,
 And rais'd their prices three to one :
 For one predicting pimp has th' odds
 Of chauldrons of plain downright bawds. 370
 But as an elf (the Devil's valet)
 Is not so slight a thing to get ;
 For those that do his bus'ness best,
 In hell are us'd the ruggedest ;
 Before so meriting a person 375
 Cou'd get a grant, but in reversion,
 He serv'd two prenticeships, and longer,
 I' th' myst'ry of a lady-monger.
 For (as some write) a witch's ghost,
 As soon as from the body loos'd, 380
 Becomes a puney-imp itself
 And is another witch's elf.
 He, after searching far and near,
 At length found one in LANCASHIRE,
 With whom he bargain'd before-hand, 385
 And, after hanging, entertained ;

PART IIL CANTO I.

239

Since which h' has play'd a thousand feats,
 And practis'd all mechanick cheats,
 Transform'd himself to th' ugly shapes
 Of wolves and bears, baboons and apes, 390,
 Which he has vary'd more than witches,
 Or Pharaoh's wizards cou'd their switches;
 And all with whom h' has had to do,
 Turn'd to as monstrous figures too.
 Witness myself, whom h' has abus'd, 395
 And to this beastly shape reduc'd,
 By feeding me on beans and pease,
 He crams in nasty crevices,
 And turns to comfits by his arts,
 To make me relish for disserts, 400
 And one by one, with shame and fear,
 Lick up the candy'd provender.
 Beside——But as h' was running on,
 To tell what other feats h' had done,
 The Lady stopt his full career, 405
 And told him now 'twas time to hear:
 If half those things (said she) be true—
 They're all, (quoth he,) I swear by you.
 Why then (said she,) That SIDROPHEL
 Has damn'd himself to th' pit of Hell; 410
 Who, mounted on a broom, the nag
 And hackney of a Lapland hag,
 In quest of you came hither post,
 Within an hour (I'm surc) at most;
 Who told me all you swear and say, 415
 Quite contrary another way;
 Vow'd that you came to him to know
 If you should carry me or no;
 And would have hir'd him, and his imps,
 To be your match-makers and pimps, 420

T' engage the Devil on your side,
 And steal (like PROSERPINE) your bride.
 But he, disdaining to embrace
 So filthy a design and base,
 You tell to vapouring and huffing, 425
 And drew upon him like a ruffin;
 Surpriz'd him meanly, unprepar'd,
 Before h' had time to mount his guard;
 And left him dead upon the ground,
 With many a bruise and desperate wound: 430
 Swore you had broke and robb'd his house,
 And stole his talismanique louse,
 And all his new-found old inventions;
 With flat felonious intentions;
 Which he could bring out where he had, 435
 And what he bought them for, and paid.
 His flea, his morpion, and punese,
 If he had gotten for his proper ease,
 And all in perfect minutes made,
 By th' ablest artist of the trade; 440
 Which (he could prove it) since he lost,
 He has been eaten up almost;
 And all together might amount
 To many hundreds on account;
 For which h' had got sufficient warrant 445
 To seize the malefactors errant,
 Without capacity of bail,
 But of a cart's or horse's tail;
 And did not doubt to bring the wretches
 To serve for pendulums to watches; 450
 Which, modern virtuosos say,
 Incline to hanging every way.
Beside, he swore, and swore 'twas true,
That, ere he went in quest of you,

PART III. CANTO I.

241

He set a figure to discover 455
 If you were fled to RYE or DOVER;
 And found it clear, that, to betray
 Yourself and me, you fled this way;
 And that he was upon pursuit,
 To take you somewhere hereabout. 460
 He vow'd he had intelligence
 Of all that past before and since;
 And found that, e'er you came to him,
 Y' had been engaging life and limb
 About a case of tender conscience, 465
 Where both abounded in your own sense;
 Till RALPHO, by his light and grace,
 Had clear'd all scruples in the case;
 And prov'd that you might swear and own
 Whatever's by the wicked done, 470
 For which, most basely to requite
 The service of his gifts and light,
 You strove to oblige him, by main force,
 To scourge his ribs instead of yours;
 But that he stood upon his guard, 475
 And all your vapouring out-dar'd;
 For which, between you both, the feat
 Has never been perform'd as yet.

While thus the Lady talk'd, the Knight
 Turn'd th' outside of his eyes to white, 480
 (As men of inward light are wont
 To turn their opticks in upon't)
 He wonder'd how she came to know
 What he had done, and meant to do;
 Held up his affidavit-hand, 485
 As if it had been to be arraign'd;
 Cast t'wards the door a ghastly look,
 In dread of SIBBOPHILL, and spoke :

Madam, if but one word be true
 Of all the Wizard has told you, 490
 Or but one single circumstance
 In all th' apocryphal romance,
 Say dreadful earthquakes swallow down
 This vessel, that is all your own ;
 Or may the heavens fall, and cover 495
 These reliques of your constant lover.

You have provided well, quoth she,
 I thank you) for yourself and me,
 And shewn your presbyterian wits
 Pump punctual with the Jesuits ; 500

A most compendious way, and civil,
 At once to cheat the world, the Devil,
 And Heaven and Hell, yourselves, and those
 On whom you vainly think t' impose.

Why then (quoth he) may Hell surprize— 505
 That trick (said she) will not pass twice :

'Ve learn'd how far I'm to believe
 Your pinning oaths upon your sleeve.
 But there's a better way of clearing
 What you would prove than downright swearing :
 For if you have perform'd the feat, 511
 The blows are visible as yet,

Enough to serve for satisfaction
 Of nicest scruples in the action :
 And if you can produce those knobs, 515
 Although they're but the witch's drubs,

'll pass them all upon account,
 As if your natural self had done't ;
 Provided that they pass th' opinion
 Of able juries of old women, 520

Who, us'd to judge all matter of facts
 In bellies, may do so for backs.

PART III. CANTO I.

243

Madam, (quoth he,) your love's a million ;
 To do is less than to be willing,
 As I am, were it in my power, 525
 T' obey, what you command, and more :
 But for performing what you bid,
 I thank you as much as if I did.]
 You know I ought to have a care
 To keep my wounds from taking air : 530
 For wounds in those that are all heart,
 Are dangerous in any part.

I find (quoth she) my goods and chattels
 Are like to prove but mere drawn battels ;
 For still the longer we contend, 535
 We are but farther off the end.
 But granting now we should agree,
 What is it you expect from me ?
 Your plighted faith (quoth he) and word
 You past in heaven on record, 540
 Where all contracts, to have and t' hold,
 Are everlastingly enroll'd :
 And if 'tis counted treason here
 To raze records, 'tis much more there.

Quoth she, There are no bargains driv'n, 545
 Nor marriages clapp'd up, in Heav'n,
 And that's the reason, as some guess,
 There is no heav'n in marriages ;
 Two things that naturally press
 Too narrowly to be at ease. 550
 Their bus'ness there is only love,
 Which marriage is not like t' improve :
 Love, that's too generous to abide
 To be against its nature ty'd ;
 For where 'tis of itself inclin'd, 555
It breaks loose when it is confin'd ;

And like the soul, it's harbourer.
 Debarr'd the freedom of the air,
 Disdains against its will to stay,
 But struggles out, and flies away; . . . 560
 And therefore never can comply
 To endure the matrimonial tie,
 That binds the female and the male,
 Where th' one is but the other's bail;
 Like Roman gaolers, when they slept, 565
 Chain'd to the prisoners they kept;
 Of which the true and faithfull'st lover
 Gives best security to suffer.
 Marriage is but a beast, some say,
 That carries double ill foul way; 570
 And therefore 'tis not to b' admir'd,
 It should so suddenly be fir'd;
 A bargain at a venture made,
 Between two partners in a trade;
 (For what's inferr'd by t' have and t' hold, 575
 But something past away, and sold?)
 That as it makes but one of two,
 Reduces all things else as low;
 And, at the best, is but a mart
 Beween the one and th' other part, 580
 That on the marriage-day is paid,
 Or hour of death, the bet is laid;
 And all the rest of better or worse,
 Both are but losers out of purse.
 For when upon their uogot heirs 585
 Th' entail themselves, and all that's theirs,
 What blinder bargain e'er was driv'n,
 Or wager laid at six and seven?
 To pass themselves away, and turn
 Their childrens' tenants e're they're born? 590

PART III. CANTO I

245

Beg one another idiot
 To guardians, e'er they are begot;
 Or ever shall, perhaps, by th' one,
 Who's bound to vouch 'em for his own,
 Though got b' implicit generation, 595
 And gen'ral club of all the nation;
 For which she's fortify'd no less
 Than all the island, with four seas;
 Exacts the tribute of her dower,
 In ready insolence and power; 600
 And makes him pass away to have
 And hold, to her, himself, her slave,
 * More wretched than an ancient villain,
 Condemn'd to drudgery and tilling;
 While all he does upon the by, 605
 She is not bound to justify,
 Nor at her proper cost and charge
 Maintain the feats he does at large.
 Such hideous sots were those obedient
 Old vassals to their ladies regent; 610
 To give the cheats the eldest hand
 In foul play by the laws o' th' land;
 For which so many a legal cuckold
 Has been run down in courts and truckeld:
 A law that most unjustly yokes 615
 All Johns of Stiles to Joans of Nokes,
 Without distinction of degree,
 Condition, age, or quality:
 Admits no power of revocation,
 Nor valuable consideration, 620
 Nor writ of error, nor reverse
 Of Judgment past, for better or worse:
 Will not allow the priviledges
 That beggars challenge under hedges,

Who, when they're griev'd, can make dead horses
 Their spiritual judges of divorces ;
 While nothing else but *Reh* in *Re*
 Can set the proudest wretches free ;
 A slavery beyond enduring,
 But that 'tis of their own procuring. 630
 As spiders never seek the fly,
 But leave him, of himself, t' apply,
 So men are by themselves employ'd,
 To quit the freedom they enjoy'd,
 And run their necks into a noose, 635
 They'd break 'em after, to break loose ;
 As some whom Death would not depart,
 Have done the feat themselves by art ;
 Like ¹ Indian widows, gone to bed
 In flaming curtains to the dead ; 640
 And men as often dangled for't,
 And yet will never leave the sport.
 Nor do the ladies want excuse
 For all the stratagems they use
 To gain the advantage of the set, 645
 And lurch the amorous rook and cheat :
 For as the ^m Pythagorean soul
 Runs through all beasts, and fish and fowl,
 And has a smack of ev'ry one,
 So love does, and has ever done ; 650
 And therefore, though 'tis no'er so fond,
 Takes strangely to the vagabond,
 'Tis but an ague that's reverst,
 Whose hot fit takes the patient first,
 That after burns with cold as much 655
 As it'n in GREENLAND does the touch ;
 Melts in the furnace of desire
 Like glass, that's but the ice of fire ;

PART III. CANTO I.

247

And when his heat of fancy's over,
Becomes as hard and frail a lover. 660
For when he's with love-powder laden,
And prim'd and cock'd by Miss or Madam,
The smallest sparkle of an eye
Gives fire to his artillery;
And off the loud oaths go; but while 665
They're in the very act, recoil.
Hence 'tis so few dare take their chance
Without a sep'rate maintenance;
And widows, who have try'd one lover,
Trust none again, 'till th' have made over; 670
Or if they do, before they marry,
The foxes weigh the geese they carry;
And e're they venture o'er a stream,
Know how to size themselves and them;
Whence wittiest ladies always choose 675
To undertake the heaviest goose:
For now the world is grown so wary,
That few of either sex dare marry,
But rather trust on tick t' amours,
The cross and pile for better or worse; 680
A mode that is held honourable,
As well as French, and fashionable:
For when it falls out for the best,
Where both are incommoded least,
In soul and body two unite, 685
To make up one hermaphrodite,
Still amorous, and fond, and billing,
Like PHILIP and MARY on a shilling,
Th' have more punctilios and caprices
Between the petticoat and breeches, 690
More petulant extravagances,
Than poets make 'em in romances.

Though when their heroes 'spouse the dames,
 We hear no more of charms and flames :
 For then their late attracts decline, 695
 And turn as eager as prick'd wine ;
 And all their catterwauling tricks,
 In earnest to as jealous piques ;
 Which the ancients wisely signify'd,
 By th' yellow mantos of the bride : 700
 For jealousy is but a kind
 Of clap and grincam of the mind,
 The natural effects of love,
 As other flames and aches prove :
 But all the mischief is, the doubt 705
 On whose account they first broke out.
 For though 'n Chineses go to bed,
 And lie in, in their ladies stead,
 And for the pains they took before,
 Are nurs'd and pamper'd to do more 710
 Our green men do it worse, when th' hap
 To fall in labour of a clap :
 Both lay the child to one another :
 But who's the father, who the mother,
 'Tis hard to say in multitudes, 715
 Or who imported the French goods.
 But health and sickness b'ing all one,
 Which both engag'd before to own,
 And are not with their bodies bound
 To worship, only when they're sound, 720
 Both give and take their equal shares
 Of all they suffer by false wares :
 A fate no lover can divert
 With all his caution, wit, and art.
 For 'tis in vain to think to guess 725
 At women by appearances,

PART III. CANTO I.

219

That paint and patch their imperfections,
 Of intellectual complexions,
 And daub their tempers o'er with washes
 As artificial as their faces ; 730
 Wear under vizard-masks their talents
 And mother-wits before their gallants,
 Until they're hamper'd in the noose,
 Too fast to dream of breaking loose ;
 When all the flaws they strove to hide 735
 Are made unready with the bride,
 That with her wedding-clothes undresses
 Her complaisance and gentileesses,
 Tries all her arts to take upon her
 The government from th' easy owner ; 740
 Until the wretch is glad to wave
 His lawful right, and turn her slave ;
 Find all his having, and his holding,
 Reduc'd t' eternal noise and scolding ;
 The conjugal petard, that tears 745
 Down all portcullisses of ears,
 And make the volley of one tongue.
 For all their leathern shields too strong ;
 When only arm'd with noise and nails,
 The female silk-worms ride the males, 750
 • Transtorm 'em into rams and goats,
 Like Sirens, with their charming notes ;
 Sweet as a screech-owl's serenade,
 Or those enchanting murmurs made
 By th' husband & mandrake and the wife, 755
 Both bury'd (like themselves) alive.
 Quoth he, These reasons are but strains
 Of wanton, over-heated brains,
 Which ralliers, in their wit, or drink,
 Do rather wheedle with than think. 760

Man was not man in paradise,
Until he was created twice,
And had his better half, his bride,
Carv'd from the original, his side,
T' amend his natural defects,
And perfect his recruited sex ;
Inlarge his breed at once, and lessen
The pains and labour of increasing,
By changing them for other cares,
As by his dry'd-up paps appears.
His body, that stupendous frame,
Of all the world the anagram,
Is of two equal parts compaet,
In shape and symmetry exact,
Of which the left and female side
Is to the manly right a bride ;
Both join'd together with such art,
That nothing else but death can part.
Those heav'nly attracts of yours, your eyes,
And face, that all the world surprize,
That dazzle all that look upon ye,
And scorch all other ladies tawny,
Those ravishing and charming graces
Are all made up of two half faces,
That in a mathematick line,
Like those in other heavens, join,
Of which if either grew alone,
T' would fright as much to look upon :
And so would that sweet bud your lip,
Without the other's fellowship.
Our noblest senses act by pairs ;
Two eyes to see ; to hear, two ears ;
Th' intelligencers of the mind,
To wait upon the soul design'd ;

PART III. CANTO L

251

But those that serve the body alone, 795
Are single, and confin'd to one.
The 4th world is but two parts, that meet
And close at th' equinoctial fit ;
And so are all the works of nature,
Stamp'd with her signature on matter ; 800
Which all her creatures, to a leaf,
Or smallest blade of grass receive ;
All which sufficiently declare,
How entirely marriage is her care,
The only method that she uses 805
In all the wonders she produces :
And those that take their rules from her,
Can never be deceiv'd, nor err.
For what secures the civil life,
But pawns of children, and a wife ? 810
That lie like hostages at stake,
To pay for all men undertake ;
To whom it is as necessary
As to be born and breathe, to marry ;
So universal all mankind, 815
In nothing else, is of one mind.
For in what stupid age, or nation,
Was marriage ever out of fashion ?
Unless among the ^r Amazons,
Or cloister'd friars, and vestal nuns ; 820
Or Stoicks, who, to bar the freaks
And loose excesses of the sex,
Prepost'rously wou'd have all women
Turn'd up to all the world in common.
Though men would find such mortal feuds, 825
In sharing of their publick goods,
'Twould put them to more charge of lives,
Than they're supply'd with now by wives ;

Until they graze, and wear their clothes,
 As beasts do, of their native growths;
 For simple wearing of their horns
 Will not suffice to serve their turns,
 For what can we pretend to inherit,
 Unless the marriage-deed will bear it?
 Could claim no right to lands or rents,
 But for our parents' settlements;
 Had been but younger sons of th' earth,
 Debarr'd it all, but for our birth.
 What honours or estates of peers,
 Cou'd be preserv'd but by their heirs?
 And what security maintains
 Their right and title, but the banes?
 What crowns could be hereditary,
 If greatest monarchs did not marry,
 And with their consorts consummate
 Their weightiest interests of state?
 For all the amours of princes are
 But guarantees of peace or war;
 Or what but marriage has a charm
 The rage of empires to disarm,
 Make blood and desolation cease,
 And fire and sword unite in peace,
 When all their fierce contest for forage
 Conclude in articles of marriage?
 Nor does the genial bed provide
 Less for the int'rest of the bride;
 Who else had not the least pretence
 To as much as due benevolence
 Could no more title take upon her
 To virtue, quality, and honour,
 Than ladies grant, or menusur'd,
 And feme-coverts to all mankind

PART III. CANTO I.

253

All women would be of one piece,
The virtuous matron and the miss ;
The nymphs of chaste ^s Diana's train, 865
The same with those in ^t LEWKNER's Lane ;
But for the difference marriage makes
'Twixt wives and ladies of the lakes ;
Besides the joys of place and birth,
The sex's paradise on earth ; 870

A privilege so sacred held,
That none will to their mothers yield ;
But rather than not go before,
Abandon Heaven at the door.
And if th' indulgent law allows 875

A greater freedom to the spouse,
The ^u reason is, because the wife
Runs greater hazards of her life ;
Is trusted with the form and matter
Of all mankind by careful nature ; 880

Where man brings nothing but the stuff
She frames the wond'rous fabric of ;
Who therefore, in a streight, may freely
Demand the clergy of her belly,
And make it save her the same way 885

It seldom misses to betray ;
Unless both parties wisely enter
Into the liturgy indenture,
And though some fits of small contest
Sometimes fall out among the best, 890

That is no more than ev'ry lover
Does from his hackney-lady suffer ;
That makes no breach of faith and love,
But rather (sometimes) serves t' improve.
For as in running, ev'ry pace 895
Is *but between two legs a race,*

In which both do their uttermost
 To get before, and win the post,
 Yet when they're at their race's ends,
 They're still as kind and constant friends,
 And, to relieve their weariness,
 By turns give one another ease;
 So all those false alarms of strife
 Between the husband and the wife,
 And little quarrels, often prove
 To be but new recruits of love;
 When those wh' are always kind or coy,
 In time must either tire or cloy.
 Nor are their loudest clamours more,
 Than as they're relish'd, sweet or sour;
 Like musick, that proves bad or good,
 According as 'tis understood.
 In all amours, a lover burns
 With frowns as well as smiles by turns;
 And hearts have been as oft with stiffen
 As charming looks surpriz'd and stolen.
 Then why should more bewitching clamour
 Some lovers not as much enamour?
 For discords make the sweetest airs;
 And curses are a kind of pray'rs;
 Too slight alloys for all those grand
 Felicities by marriage gain'd.
 For nothing else has pow'r to settle
 Th' interests of love perpetual;
 An act and deed, that makes one heart
 Becomes another's counter-part,
 And passes fines on faith and love,
 Enroll'd and register'd above,
 To seal the slippery knots of vows,
 Which nothing else but death can loose.

PART III. CANTO I.

255

And what security's too strong,
To guard that gentle heart from wrong,
That to its friend is glad to pass
Itself away, and all it has ;
And, like an anchorite, gives over
This world for th' heaven of a lover ?

935

I grant (quoth she) there are some few
Who take that course, and find it true ;
But millions whom the same does sentence
To heav'n b' another way—repentance.

940

Love's arrows are but shot at rovers ;
Though all they hit, they turn to lovers ;
And all the weighty consequents
Depend upon more blind events,

Than gamesters, when they play a set
With greatest cunning at piquet,
Put out with caution, but take in.

945

They know not what, unsight, unseen.
For what do lovers, when they're fast
In one another's arms embrac't,

950

But strive to plunder, and convey
Each other, like a prize, away ?

To change the property of selves,
As sucking children are by elves ?

And if they use their persons so,
What will they to their fortunes do ?
Their fortunes ! the perpetual aims
Of all their extasies and flames.

955

For when the money's on the book,
And, All my worldly goods—but spoke,
(The formal livery and seisin
That puts a lover in possession,)

960

To that alone the bridegroom's wedded ;
The bride a flamm, that's superseded.

To that their faith is still made good,
 And all the oaths to us they vow'd :
 For when we once resign our pow'rs,
 W' have nothing left we can call ours :
 Our money's now become the Miss
 Of all your lives and services ;
 And we forsaken, and postpon'd ;
 But bawds to what before we own'd ;
 Which, as it made y' at first gallant us,
 So now hires others to supplant us,
 Until 'tis all turn'd out of doors,
 (As we had been) for new amours :
 For what did ever heiress yet
 By being born to lordships get ?
 When the more lady sh' is of manours,
 She's but expos'd to more trepanners,
 Pays for their projects and designs,
 And for her own destruction fines ;
 And does but tempt them with her riches,
 To use her as the Dev'l does witches ;
 Who takes it for a special grace
 To be their cully for a space,
 That when the time's expir'd, the drazcls
 For ever may become his vassals :
 So she, bewitch'd by rooks and spirits,
 Betrays herself, and all sh' inherits ;
 Is bought and sold, like stolen goods,
 By pimps, and match-makers, and bawds,
 Until they force her to convey,
 And steal the thief himself away.
 These are the everlasting fruits
 Of all your passionate love-suits,
 Th' effects of all your amorous fancies
 To portions and inheritances ;

97

97½

980

985

990

995

PART III. CANTO I.

207

Your love-sick rapture for fruition
 Of dowry, jointure, and tuition; 1000
 To which you make address and courtship;
 And with your bodies strive to worship,
 That th' infants' fortunes may partake
 Of love too, for the mother's sake.
 For these you play at purposes, 1005
 And love your love's with A's and B's:
 For these at Beste and L'Ombre woo,
 And play for love and money too;
 Strive who shall be the ablest man
 At right gallanting of a fan; 1010
 And who the most genteely breed
 At sucking of a vizard-head;
 How best t' accost us in all quarters;
 T' our question—and—command new Garters;
 And solidly discourse upon 1015
 All sorts of dresses, Pro and Con.
 For there's no mystery nor trade,
 But in the art of love is made:
 And when you have more debts to pay
 Than Michaelmas and Lady-Day, 1020
 And no way possible to do't,
 But love and oaths, and restless suit,
 To us y' apply to pay the scores
 Of all your cully'd, past amours:
 Act o'er your flames and darts again, 1025
 And charge us with your wounds and pain;
 Which others influences long since
 Have charm'd your noses with and shins;
 For which the surgeon is unpaid,
 And like to be, without our aid. 1030
 Lord! what an am'rous thing is want!
 How debts and mortgages enchant!

HUDIBRAS.

8

What graces must that lady have
That can from executions save !
What charms that can reverse extent,
And null decree and exigent !

1035

What magical attracts and graces,
That can redeem from Scire facias !
From bonds and statutes can discharge,
And from contempts of courts enlarge !
These are the highest excellencies

1040

Of all your true or false pretences:
And you would damn yourselves, and swear
As much t' an hostess dowager,
Grown fat and pursy by retail

1045

Of pots of beer and bottled ale ;
And find her fitter for your turn ;
For fat is wondrous apt to burn ;
Who at your flames would soon take fire,
Relent, and melt to your desire,
And, like a candle in the socket,
Dissolve her graces int' your pocket.

1050

By this time 'twas grown dark and late,
When they heard a knocking at the gate,
Laid on in haste with such a powder,
The blows grew louder still and louder ;
Which HUDIBRAS, as if th' had been

1055

Bestow'd as freely on his skin,
Expounding, by his inward light,
Or rather more prophetick fright,
To be the Wizard, come to search,
And take him napping in the lurch,
Turn'd pale as ashes or a clout ;
But why or wherefore is a doubt :
For men will tremble, and turn paler,
With too much or too little valour.

1060

1065

PART III. CANTO I.

259

His heart laid on, as if it try'd
To force a passage through his side,
Impatient (as he vow'd) to wait 'em,
But in a fury to fly at 'em ; 1070
And therefore beat, and laid about,
To find a cranny to creep out.

But she, who saw in what a taking
The Knight was by his furious quaking,
Undaunted cry'd, Courage, Sir Knight ; 1075
Know, I'm resolv'd to break no rite
Of hospitality t' a stranger ;
But, to secure you out of danger,
Will here myself stand sentinel,

To guard this pass 'gainst SIDROPHEL. 1080
Women, you know, do seldom fail
To make the stoutest men turn tail ;
And bravely scorn to turn their backs
Upon the desp'ratest attacks.

At this the Knight grew resolute 1085
As w IRONSIDE and HARDIKNUTE :
His fortitude began to rally,
And out he cry'd aloud to sally.

But she besought him to convey
His courage rather out o' th' way, 1090
And lodge in ambush on the floor,
Or fortify'd behind a door ;
That if the enemy shou'd enter,
He might relieve her in th' adventure.

Mean while they knock'd against the door 1095
As fierce as at the gate before,
Which made the Renegado Knight
Relapse again t' his former fright.

He thought it desperate to stay
Till th' enemy had forc'd his way, 1100

But rather post himself, to serve
 The lady, for a fresh reserve.
 His duty was not to dispute,
 But what sh' had order'd execute ;
 Which he resolv'd in haste t' obey, 1103
 And therefore stoutly march'd away ;
 And all h' encounter'd fell upon,
 Though in the dark, and all alone ;
 Till fear, that braver feats performs
 Than ever courage dar'd in arms, 1110
 Had drawn him up before a pass,
 To stand upon his guard, and face :
 This he courageously invaded,
 And having enter'd, barricado'd,
 Inscor'd himself as formidable 1115
 As could be underneath a table,
 Where he lay down in ambush close,
 T' expect th' arrival of his foe.
 Few minutes he had lain perdue,
 To guard his desp'rate avenue, 1120
 Before he heard a dreadful shout,
 As loud as putting to the rout,
 With which impatiently alarm'd,
 He fancy'd th' enemy had storm'd,
 And, after ent'ring, SIBBOPHET 1125
 Was fall'n upon the guards pell-mell :
 He therefore sent out all his scouts,
 To bring him in intelligences,
 Which vulgar, out of ignorance,
 Mistake for falling in a trance ; 1130
 But those that trade in geomancy,
 Affirm to be the strength of fancy ;
 In which the x Lapland Magi deal
 And things incredible reveal.

PART III. CANTO I.

261

Mean while the foe beat up his quarters,
 And storm'd the out-works of his fortress :
 And as another, of the same
 Degree and party, in arms and fame,
 That in the same cause had engag'd,
 And war with equal conduct wag'd,
 By vent'ring only but to thrust
 His head a span beyond his post,
 B' a gen'ral of the cavaliers
 Was dragg'd thro' a window by th' ears ;
 So he was serv'd in his redoubt,
 And by the other end pull'd out.

1135

1140

1145

Soon as they had him at their mercy,
 They put him to the cudgel fiercely,
 As if they'd scorn'd to trade or barter,
 By giving or by taking quarter :
 They stoutly on his quarters laid,
 Until his scouts came in t' his aid.
 For when a man is past his sense,
 There's no way to reduce him thence,
 But twinging him by th' ears or nose,
 Or laying on of heavy blows ;
 And if that will not do the deed,
 To y burning with hot irons proceed.
 No sooner was he come t' himself,
 But on his neck a sturdy elf
 Clapp'd, in a trice, his cloven hoof,
 And thus attack'd him with reproof ;

1150

1155

1160

Mortal, thou art betray'd to us
 B' our friend, thy Evil Genius,
 Who, for thy horrid perjuries,
 Thy breach of faith, and turning lies,
 The Brethren's privilege (against
The wicked) on themselves, the Saints,

1165

Has here thy wretched carcass sent
For just revenge and punishment ; 1170
Which thou hast now no way to lessen,
But by an open, free confession ;
For if we catch thee sailing once,
'I'll fall the heavier on thy bones.

What made thee venture to betray, 1175
And filch the lady's heart away ?
To spirit her to matrimony ?—

That which contracts all matches—money.
It was th' enchantment of her riches
That made m' apply t' your crenay witches. 1180
That, in return, wou'd pay th' expence,
The wear and tear of conscience ;
Which I cou'd have patch'd up, and turn'd,
For the hundredth part of what I earn'd.

Didst thou not love her then ? Speak true. 1185
No more (quoth he) than I love you.—

How wou'd'st th' have us'd her, and her money ?—
First turn'd her up to alimony ;
And laid her dowry out in law,
To null her jointure with a flaw, 1190
Which I before-hand had agreed
T' have put, on purpose, in the deed ;
And bar her widow's making over
T' a friend in trust, or private lover.

What made thee pick and chuse her out, 1195
T' employ their sorceries about ?—
That which makes gamesters play with those
Who have least wit, and most to lose.

But didst thou scourge thy vessel thus,
As thou hast damp'd thyself to us ? 1200

I see you take me for an ass ;
'Tis true, I thought the trick wou'd pass

PART III. CANTO I.

263

Upon a woman well enough,
As 't has been often found by proof,
Whose humours are not to be won,
But when they are impos'd upon.
For love approves of all they do
That stand for candidates, and woo.

1203

Why didst thou forge those shameful lies
Of bears and witches in disguise?

1210

That is no more than authors give
The rabble credit to believe:

A trick of following their leaders,
To entertain their gentle readers;

And we have now no other way

1215

Of passing all we do or say:

Which, when 'tis natural and true,
Will be believ'd b' a very few,

Beside the danger of offence,

The fatal enmity of sense.

1220

Why did thou chuse that cursed sin,
Hypocrisy, to set up in?

Because it is in the thriving'st calling,

The only Saints-belt that rings all in;

In which all churches are concern'd,

1225

And is the easiest to be learn'd:

For no degrees, unless th' employ't,

Can ever gain much, or enjoy't:

A gift that is not only able

To domineer among the rabble,

1230

But by the laws impower'd to rout,

And awe the greatest that stand out;

Which few hold forth against, for fear

Their hands should slip, and come too near;

For no sin else among the Saints

1235

Is taught so tenderly against.

What made thee break thy plighted vows?—
 That which makes others break a house,
 And hang, and scorn ye all, before
 Endure the plague of being poor.

1240

Quoth he, I see you have more tricks
 Than all your doating politicks,
 That are grown old, and out of fashion,
 Compar'd with your New Reformation;
 That we must come to school to you,
 To learn your more refin'd, and new.

1245

Quoth he, If you will give me leave
 To tell you what I now perceive,
 You'll find yourself an arrant chouse,
 If y' were but at a Meeting-House.—
 'Tis true, quoth he, we ne'er come there,
 Because, w' have let 'em out by th' year.

1250

Truly, quoth he, you can't imagine
 What wond'rous things they will engage in:
 That as your fellow-fiends in Hell
 Were angels all before they fell,
 So are you like to be agen,
 Compar'd with th' angels of us men.

1255

Quoth he, I am resolv'd to be
 Thy scholar in this mystery;
 And therefore first desire to know
 Some principles on which you go.

1260

What makes a knave a child of God,
 And one of us?—A livelihood.
 What renders beating out of brains,
 And murder, godliness?—Great gains.

1265

What's tender conscience?—'Tis a botch,
 That will not bear the gentlest touch;
*But breaking out, dispatches more
 Than th' epidemical'st plague-sore.*

1270

PART III. CANTO I.

265

What makes y' encroach upon our trade,
 And damn all others?—To be paid.
 What's orthodox, and true believing
 Against a conscience?—A good living.
 What makes rebelling against Kings 1275
 A Good Old Cause?—Administstrings.
 What makes all doctrines plain and clear?—
 About two hundred pounds a year.
 And that which was prov'd true before,
 Prove false again?—Two hundred more. 1280
 What makes the breaking of all oaths
 A holy duty?—Food and cloaths.
 What laws and freedom, persecution?—
 B'ing out of pow'r, and contribution.
 What makes a church a den of thieves?— 1285
 A dean and chapter, and white sleeves.
 And what would serve, if those were gone,
 To make it orthodox?—Our own.
 What makes morality a crime,
 The most notorious of the time; 1290
 Morality, which both the Saints,
 And wicked too, cry out against?—
 'Cause grace and virtue are within
 Prohibited degrees of kin;
 And therefore no true Saint allows 1295
 They shall be suffer'd to espouse;
 For Saints can need no conscience,
 That with morality dispense;
 As virtue's impious, when 'tis rooted
 In nature only, and not imputed : 1300
 But why the wicked should do so,
 We neither know, or care to do.
 What's liberty of conscience,
 I' th' natural and genuine sense?

'Tis to restore, with more security,
 Rebellion to its ancient purity;
 And christian liberty reduce
 To th' elder practice of the Jews.
 For a large conscience is all one,
 And signifies the same with none. 1305

It is enough (quoth he) for once,
 And has repriev'd thy forfeit bones:
 NICK MACHIAVEL had ne'er a trick,
 (Though he gave his name to our Old Nick,) 1310
 But was below the least of these,
 That pass i' th' world for helliness. 1315

This said, the furies and the light
 In th' instant vanish'd out of sight,
 And left him in the dark alone,
 With stinks of brimstone and his own. 1320

The « Queen of Night, whose large command
 Rules all the sea, and half the land,
 And over moist and crazy brains,
 In high spring-tides, at midnight reigns,
 Was now declining to the west, 1325

To go to bed, and take her rest;
 When HUDIBRAS, whose stubborn blows
 Deny'd his bones that soft repose,
 Lay still expecting worse and more,
 Stretch'd out at length upon the floor: 1330

And though he shut his eyes as fast
 As if h' had been to sleep his last,
 Saw all the shapes that fear or wizards
 Do make the Devil wear for vizards,
 And pricking up his ears, to hark 1335

If he con'd hear too in the dark,
 Was first invaded with a groan,
 And after, in a feeble tone,

PART III. CANTO I.

267

These trembling words: Unhappy wretch !
 What hast thou gotten by this fetch ; 1340
 Or all thy tricks, in this new trade,
 Thy holy brotherhood o' th' blade ?
 By sauntring still on some adventure,
 And growing to thy horse a Centaure ?
 To stuff thy skin with swelling knobs 1345
 Of cruel and hard-wooded drubs ?
 For still th' hast had the worst on't yet,
 As well in conquest as defeat,
 Night is the sabbath of mankind,
 To rest the body and the mind, 1350
 Which now thou art deny'd to keep,
 And cure thy labour'd corpse with sleep.
 The Knight, who heard the words, explain'd,
 As meant to him, this reprimand.
 Because the character did hit 1355
 Paint-blank upon his case so fit ;
 Believ'd it was some drolling spright,
 That staid upon the guard that night.
 And one of those h' had seen, and felt
 The drubs he had so freely dealt ; 1360
 When, after a short pause and groan,
 The doleful Spirit thus went on :
 This 'tis t' engage with dogs and bears
 Pell-mell together by the ears,
 And, after painful bangs and knocks, 1365
 To lie in limbo in the stocks,
 And from the pinnacle of glory
 Fall headlong into purgatory.
 (Thought he, this devil's full of malice,
 That on my late disasters rallies :) 1370
 Condemn'd to whipping, but deserv'd it,
 By being more heroic-minded ;

And at a riding handled worse,
 With treats more slovenly and coarse :
 Engag'd with fiends in stubborn wars, 1575
 And hot disputes with conjurers ;
 And when th' hadst bravely won the day,
 Wast fain to steal thyself away.

(I see, thought he, this shameless elf
 Wou'd fain steal me too from myself, 1580
 That impudently dares to own
 What I have suffer'd for and done,)
 And now but vent'ring to betray,
 Hast met with vengeance the same way.

Thought he, how does the Devil know 1585
 What 'twas that I design'd to do ?
 His office of intelligence,
 His oracles, are ceas'd long since ;
 And he knows nothing of the Saints,
 But what some treacherous spy acquaints. 1590
 This is some pettifogging fiend,
 Some under door-keeper's friend's friend,
 That undertakes to understand,
 And juggles at the second-hand ;
 And now would pass for Spirit Po, 1595
 And all mens' dark concerns foreknow.
 I think I need not fear him for't ;
 These rallying devils do no hurt.
 With that he rous'd his drooping heart,
 And hastily cry'd out, What art ? 1400

A wretch (quoth he) whom want of grace
 Has brought to this unhappy place.

I do believe thee, quoth the Knight ;
 Thus far I'm sure th' art in the right ;
 And know what 'tis that troubles thee, 1405
 Better than thou hast guess'd of me.

PART III. CANTO I.

369

Thou art some poultry, black-guard spright,
 Condemn'd to drudg'ry in the night ;
 Thou hast no work to do in th' house,
 Nor half-penny to drop in shoes ; 1410
 Without the raising of which sun,
 You dare not be so troublesome,
 To pinch the slatterns black and blue,
 For leaving you their work to do,
 This is your bus'ness good Pug-Robin, 1415
 And your diversion, dull dry-bolting,
 T' entice fanatics in the dirt,
 And wash them clean in ditches ser't ;
 Of which conceit you are so proud,
 At ev'ry jest you laugh aloud, 1420
 As now you wou'd have done by me,
 But that I ban'd your millery.

Sir (quoth the voice) y' are no such b Sophy
 As you would have the world judge of ye.
 If you design to weigh our talents 1425
 I' the standard of your own false balance,
 Or think it possible to know
 Us ghosts as well as we do you ;
 We, who have been the everlasting
 Companions of your drubs and bawling, 1430
 And never left you in content,
 With male or female, man or beast,
 But prov'd as true t' ye, and entire,
 In all adventures, as your 'Squire.

Quoth he, That may be said as true 1435
 By the idlest pug of all your crew :
 For none cou'd have betray'd us none
 Than those allies of ours and yours,
 But I have sent him for a token
 To your Low-Country Hecan-Adam, 1440

To whose infernal shores I hope
 He'll swing like skippers in a rope.
 And if y' have been more just to me
 (As I am apt to think) than he,
 I am afraid it is as true, 1443

What th' ill-affected say of you :
 Y' have spous'd the Covenant and Cause,
 By holding up your cloven paws.

Sir, quoth the voice, 'tis true, I grant,
 We made and took the Covenant ; 1450

But that no more concerns the Cause
 Than other perj'ries do the laws,
 Which when they're prov'd in open court,
 Wear wooden c peccadillo's for't :
 And that's the reason Cov'nanters 1455
 Hold up their hands like rogues at bars.

I see, quoth HUDIBRAS, from whence
 These scandals of the Saints commence,
 That are but natural effects
 Of Satan's malice, and his sects, 1460
 Those Spider-Saints, that hang by threads,
 Spun out o' th' intrails of their heads.

Sir, quoth the voice, that may as true
 And properly be said of you,
 Whose talents may compare with eithers, 1465
 Or both the other put together.

For all the Independents do,
 Is only what you forc'd 'em to ;
 You, who are not content alone
 With tricks to put the Devil down, 1470

But must have armies rais'd to back
 The gospel-work you undertake ;

*As if artillery, and edge-tools,
 Were the only engines to save souls ;*

PART III. CANTO I.

271

While he, poor devil, has no pow'r
 1475
 By force to run down and devour ;
 Has ne'er a Classis ; cannot sentence
 To stools or poundage of repentance ;
 Is ty'd up only to design,
 T' entice, and tempt, and undermine, 1480
 In which you all his arts out-do,
 And prove yourselves his betters too.
 Hence 'tis d possessions do less evil
 Than mere temptations of the Devil,
 Which, all the horrid'st actions done, 1485
 Are charg'd in courts of law upon ;
 Because, unless they help the elf,
 He can do little of himself ;
 And therefore where he's best possess'd,
 Acts most against his interest ; 1490
 Surprizes none, but those wh' have priests
 To turn him out, and exorcists,
 Supply'd with spiritual provision,
 And magazines of ammunition ;
 With crosses, relics, crucifixes, 1495
 Beads, pictures, rosaries, and pixes ;
 The tools of working our salvation
 By mere mechanick operation ;
 With holy water, like a sluice,
 To overflow all avenues. 1500
 But those wh' are utterly unarm'd
 T' oppose his entrance, if he storm'd,
 He never offers to surprize,
 Although his falsest enemies ;
 But is content to be their drudge, 1505
 And on their errands glad to trudge :
 For where are all your forfeitures
Intrusted in safe hands but ours ?

Who are but jailors of the holes,
 And dungeons where you clap up souls;
 Like under-keepers, turn the keys,
 Your mittimus anathemas;
 And never boggle to restore
 The members you deliver o're
 Upon demand, with fairer justice
 Than all your covenanting Trustees;
 Unless to punish them the worse,
 You put them in the secular pow'rs,
 And pass their souls, as some demise
 The same estate in mortgage twice;
 Then to a legal Utlegation
 You turn your excommunication,
 And for a groat unpaid, that's due,
 Distrain on soul and body too,
 Thought he, 'tis no mean part of civil
 State prudence to cajole the Devil;
 And not to handle him too rough,
 When h' has us in his cloven hoof.
 'Tis true, quoth he, that intercourse
 Has pass'd between your friends and ours;
 That as you trust us, in our way,
 You raise your members, and to lay,
 We send you others of our own,
 Enounc'd to hang themselves or drown;
 We, frighted with our oratory,
 Have leap'd down headlong many a story:
 Have us'd all means to propagate
 Our mighty interests of state;
 And out our spiritual gifts to further
 Our great designs of rage and murder.
 If the Saints are nam'd from blood,
 Only have made that title good;

1310

1315

1320

1325

1330

1335

1340

And if it were but in our power,
We should not scruple to do more,
And not be half a soul behind 1545
Of all dissenters of mankind.

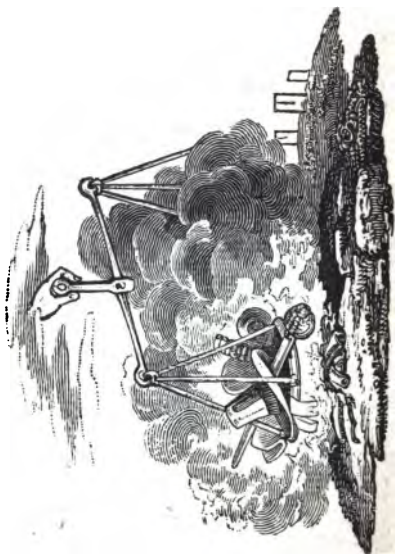
Right, quoth the voice, and as I scorn
To be ungrateful, in return
Of all those kind good offices,
I'll free you out of this distress, 1550
And set you down in safety, where
It is no time to tell you here.
The cock crows, and the morn grows on,
When 'tis decreed I must be gone ;
And if I leave you here till day, 1555
You'll find it hard to get away.

With that the Spirit grop'd about,
To find th' enchanted hero out,
And try'd with haste to lift him up ;
But found his forlorn hope, his crup, 1560
Unserviceable with kicks and blows,
Receiv'd from harden'd-hearted foes.
He thought to drag him by the heels,
Like Gresham carts, with legs for wheels ;
But fear, that soonest cures those sores 1565
In danger of relapse to worse,
Came in t' assist him with it's aid
And up his sinking vessel weigh'd.
No sooner was he fit to trudge,
But both made ready to dislodge. 1570
The Spirit hors'd him like a sack
Upon the vehicle his back ;
And bore him headlong into th' hall,
With some few rubs against the wall ;
Where finding out the postern lock'd,
1575
And th' avenues as strongly block'd,

H' attack'd the window, storm'd the glass,
 And in a moment gain'd the pass;
 Thro' which he dragg'd the worsted souldier's
 Fore-quarters out by the head and shoulders; 1580
 And cautiously began to scout,
 To find their fellow-cattle out.
 Nor was it half a minute's quest,
 Ere he retriev'd the champion's beast.
 Ty'd to a pale, instead of rack; 1585
 But ne'er a saddle on his back,
 Nor pistols at the saddle-bow.
 Convey'd away the Lord knows how,
 He thought it was no time to stay,
 And let the night too steal away; 1590
 But in a trice advanc'd the Knight
 Upon the bare ridge, bolt upright;
 And groping out for RALPH's jade,
 He found the saddle too was strap'd,
 And in the place a heap of soap, 1595
 On which he speedily leap'd up;
 And turning to the gate the rein.
 He kick'd and cudgell'd on amain.
 While HUDIBRAS, with equal haste,
 On both sides laid about as fast, 1600
 And spurr'd as jockies use to break.
 Or padders to secure, a neck;
 Where let us leave 'em for a time,
 And to their Churches turn our rhyme;
 To hold forth their declining state, 1605
 Which now come near an even rate.



1



PART III. CANTO II.

THE ARGUMENT.

The Saints engage in fierce Contests
About their Carnal Interests;
To share their sacrilegious Prays,
According to their Rates of Grace;
Their various Frenzies to reform,
When Cromwel left them in a Storm
Till, in th' ~~Ecstasy~~ of Ramps, the Rabble
Burns all their Grândeers of the Cabal.

THE learned write, an g Insect breezè
Is but a mungrel prince of bees,
That falls before a storm on cōws,
And stings the foundets of his house;
From whose corrupted flesh that breed 5
Of vermin did at first proceed.
So e're the storm of war broke out,
Religion spawn'd a various rout
Of petulant capricious sects,
The maggots of corrupted texts, 10
That first run all religion down,
And after ev'ry swarm its own.
For as the Persian ³ Magi once
Upon their mothers got their sons,
That were incapable t' enjoy 15
That empire any other way;
So PRESBYTER begot the other
Upon the good old Cause, his mother,
Then bore them like the Devil's dam,
Whose son and husband are the same. 20
And yet no nat'ral tie of blood,
Nor int'rest for the common good,

Cou'd, when their profits interfer'd,
 Get quarter for each other's beard.
 For when they thriv'd, they never fadg'd, 25
 But only by the ears engag'd :
 Like dogs that snarl about a bone,
 And play together when they've none,
 As by their truest characters,
 Their constant actions, plainly appears. 30
 Rebellion now began, for lack
 Of zeal and plunder, to grow slack ;
 The Cause and Covenant to lessen,
 And Providence to b' out of season :
 For now there was no more to purchase 35
 O' th' King's Revenue, and the Churches,
 But all divided, shar'd, and gone,
 That us'd to urge the Brethren on ;
 Which forc'd the stubborn'st for the Cause,
 To cross the cudgels to the laws, 40
 That what by breaking them th' had gain'd,
 By their support might be maintain'd ;
 Like thieves, that in a hemp-plot lie
 Secur'd against the hue-and-cry ;
 For PRESBYTER and INDEPENDANT 45
 Were now turn'd plaintiff and defendant ;
 Laid out their apostolic functions
 On carnal orders and injunctions ;
 And all their precious Gifts and Graces
 On outlawries and scire facias ; 50
 At i Michael's term had many a trial,
 Worse than the Dragon and St. Michael,
 Where thousands fell, in shape of fees,
 Into the bottomless abyss.
 For when like brethren, and like friends, 55
 They came to share their dividends,

And ev'ry partner to possess
 His Church and State Joint-Purchases,
 In which the ablest Saint, and best,
 Was nam'd in trust by all the rest, 60
 To pay their money ; and, instead
 Of ev'ry Brother, pass the deed ;
 He strait converted all his gifts
 To pious frauds and holy shifts ;
 And settled all the other shares 65
 Upon his outward man and's heirs ;
 Held all they claim'd as forfeit lands,
 Deliver'd up into his hands,
 And pass'd upon his conscience,
 By Pre-intail of Providence ; 70
 Impeach'd the rest for reprobates,
 That had no titles to estates,
 But by their spiritual attainments
 Degraded from the right of Saints.
 This b'ing reveal'd, they now begun 75
 With law and conscience to fall on,
 And laid about as hot and brain-sick
 As th' Utter Barrister of ^k SWANSWICK ;
 Engag'd with money-bags as bold
 As men with sand bags did of old ; 80
 That brought the lawyers in more fees
 Than all unsanctify'd Trustees ;
 Till he who had no more to show
 I' th' case receiv'd the overthrow ;
 Or both sides having had the worst, 85
 They parted as they met at first.
 POOR PRESBYTER was now reduc'd,
 Secluded, and cashier'd, and chous'd {
 Turn'd out, and excommunicate
 From all affairs of Church and State ; 90

Reform'd t' a reformato Saint,
 And glad to turn ~~itcher~~itcher;
 To stroll and teach ~~from town to town~~,
 And those he had taught up, teach down,
 And make those uses serve agen 93
 Against the new-enlighten'd men,
 As fit as when at first they were
 Reveal'd against the CAVALIER;
 Damn ANABAPTIST and FANATIC;
 As pat as Popish and Prelatic; 100
 And with as little variation,
 To serve for any Sect i' th' nation.
 The Good Old Cause, which some believe
 To be the Dev'l that tempt'd Eve
 With knowledge, and does still invite 105
 The world to mischief with new light,
 Had store of money in her purse
 When he took her for bett'r or worse;
 But now was grown deform'd and poor,
 And fit to be turn'd out of door. 110

The INDEPENDENTS (whose Rite station
 Was in the rear of reformation,
 A mungrel kind of Church-dogmas,
 That serv'd for horse and foot at once;
 And in the saddle of one steed 115
 The Saracen and Christian rid;
 Were free of ev'ry spiritual order,
 To preach, and fight, and pray, and murther
 No sooner got the start to lurch
 Both disciplines, of War and Church, 120
 And Providence enough to run
 The chief commanders of 'em down,
 But carry'd on the war against
 The common enemy o' th' Saints,

PART III. CANTO II.

979

And in a while prevail'd so far,
 To win of them the games of war,
 And he at liberty quia mare
 'T' attack themselves, as th' had before.
 For now there was no foe in arms,
 T' unite their factions with charms. 130
 But all reduc'd, and prostrate,
 Except their worst, themselves at home,
 Wh' had compass'd all they pray'd, and swore,
 And fought, and preach'd, and plunder'd for;
 Subdu'd the Nation, Church, and Senate, 135
 And all things, but their laws and hate:
 But when they came to treat and transact,
 And share the spoil of all th' had conquest,
 To botch up what th' had torn and rent,
 Religion and the Government, 140
 They met no sooner, but prepar'd
 To pull down all the wor had spar'd:
 Agreed in nothing, but t' abolish,
 Subvert, extirpate, and demolish.
 For knaves and fools bring none of kin 145
 As! Dutch Boors are t' a Scotchman.
 Both parties join'd to do their best
 To damn the publick interest,
 And herded only in councils,
 To put by one another's belis; 150
 T' out-cant the m Babylonian babooners,
 At all their dialects of jabberings,
 And tug at both ends of the saw,
 To tear down Government and Law,
 For as two cheats, thus play one game, 155
 Are both defeated of their aim;
 So those who play a game of state,
 And only cavil in debate.

Although there's nothing lost or won,
 The publick bus'ness is undone ; 160
 Which still the longer 'tis in doing,
 Becomes the surer way to ruin.

This, when the ROYALISTS perceiv'd,
 (Who to their faith as firmly cleav'd,
 And own'd the right they had paid down 165
 So dearly for, the Church and Crown,)
 Th' united constanter, and sided
 The more, the more their foes divided.

For though out-number'd, overthrown
 And by the fate of war run down, 170
 Their duty never was defeated,
 Nor from their oaths and faith retreated ;

For loyalty is still the same,
 Whether it win or lose the game ;
 True as the dial to the sun, 175
 Although it be not shin'd upon.

But when these brethren in evil,
 Their adversaries, and the Devil,
 Began once more to shew them play,
 And hopes, at least, to have a day, 180
 They rally'd in parades of woods,

And unfrequented solitudes ;
 Conven'd at midnight in out-houses,
 T' appoint new-rising rendezvonzes,
 And with a pertinacy unmatch'd, 185
 For new recruits of danger watch'd.

No sooner was one blow diverted,
 But up another party started ;
 And, as if nature too, in haste
 To furnish out supplies as fast, 190

*Before her time, had turn'd destruction
 T' a new and numerous production,*

PART III. CANTO II.

201

No sooner those were overcome,
But up rose others in their room,
That, like the Christian faith, increast 195

The more, the more they were suppress'd ;
Whom neither chains, nor transportation,
Proscription, sale, or confiscation,
Nor all the desperate events
Of former try'd experiments, 200

Nor wounds cou'd terrify, nor mangling,
To leave off loyalty and dangling ;
Nor death (with all his bones) affright
From vent'ring to maintain the right,
From staking life and fortune down 205

'Gainst all together, for the Crown ;
But kept the title of their cause
From forfeiture, like claims in laws ;
And prov'd no prosperous usurpation
Can ever settle in the nation ; 210

Until, in spite of force and treason,
They put their loyalty in possession ;
And, by their constancy and faith,
Destroy'd the mighty men of Oath.

Toss'd in a furious hurricane, 215
Did OLIVER give up his reign ;
And was believ'd, as well by Saints,
As mortal men and miscreants,
To founder in the Stygian Ferry ;

Until he was retriev'd by STERN, 220
Who, in a false erroneous dream,
Mistook the New Jerusalem

Prophanely for the apocryphal
• False Heaven at the end o' th' Hall ;
Whither it was decreed by Fate 225
His precious reliques to translate.

So ROMULUS was seen before
 B' as orthodox a P Senator;
 From whose divine illumination
 He stole the Pagan revelation.

Next him his 9 Son and Heir Apparent
 Succeeded, though a lame vicegerent;
 Who first laid by the Parliament,
 The only crutch on which he leant;
 And then sunk underneath the State,
 That rode him above horseman's weight.

And now the Saints began their reign,
 For which th' had yearn'd so long in vain,
 And felt such bowel-hankerings,
 To see an empire all of Kings.
 Deliver'd from the Egyptian awe
 Of Justice, Government, and Law,
 And free t' erect what spiritual Cantons
 Should be reveal'd, or Gospel Hans-Towns,
 To edify upon the ruins
 Of r JOHN of LEYDEN's old Out-goings;
 Who for a weather-cock hung up,
 Upon the Mother Church's top;
 Was made a type, by Providence,
 Of all their revelations since;
 And now fulfill'd by his successors,
 Who equally mistook their measures:
 For when they came to shape the model,
 Not one could fit another's noddle;
 But found their Light and Gifts more wide
 From fadging than th' unsanctify'd;
 While ev'ry individual brother
 Strove hand to fist against another;
And still the maddest, and most crackt,
Were found the busiest to transact:

PART III. CANTO II.

283

For though most hands dispatch apace,
And make light work, (the proverb says,)
Yet many diff'rent intellects
Are found t' have contrary effects;
And many heads t' obstruct intrigues, 265
As slowest insects have most legs.

Some were for setting up a King;
But all the rest for no such thing.
Unless KING JESUS. Others tamper'd
For FLEETWOOD, DESBOROUGH, and LAMBERT;
Some for the Ramp; and some, more crafty,
For Agitators, and the safety;
Some for the Gospel, and massacres
Of Spiritual Affidavit-makers,
That swore to any human regence, 275
Oaths of supremacy and allegiance;
Yea, though the ablest swearing Saint
That vouch'd the Bulls o' th' Covenant:
Others for pulling down th' high-places
Of Synods and Provincial Classes, 280
That us'd to make such hostile inroads
Upon the Saints, like bloody NIMRODS:
Some for fulfilling prophecies,
And th' expiration of th' excise;
And some against th' Egyptian bondage 285
Of holy-days, and paying poundage:
Some for the cutting down of groves,
And rectifying bakers' loaves:
And some for finding out expedients
Against the slav'ry of obedience. 290
Some were for Gospel Ministers,
And some for Red-coat Seculars,
As men most fit t' hold forth the word,
And wield the one and th' other sword.

Some were for carrying on the war;
 Against the Pope, and some the Turk;
 Some for engaging to suppress
 The Camisado of suppers,
 That gifts and dispensations hinder'd,
 And turn'd to th' Outward Man the Inward;
 More proper for the cloudy night
 Of Popery than Gospel Light.
 Others were for abolishing
 That tool of matrimony, a ring,
 With which th' uncanoniz'd bridegroom
 Is marry'd only to a thumb;
 (As wise as ringing of a pig,
 That us'd to break up ground, and dig;)
 The bride to nothing but her will,
 That nulls the after-marriage still.
 Some were for th' other extirpation
 Of linsey-woolsey in the nation;
 And some against all idolizing
 The Cross in shops-books, or Baptizing:
 Others to make all things recent
 The Christian or Surname of Saint;
 And force all churches, streets, and towns,
 The holy title to renounce.
 Some 'gainst a Third Estate of Souls,
 And bringing down the price of coals:
 Some for abolishing black-pudding,
 And eating nothing with the blood in;
 To abrogate them roots and branches;
 While others were for eating haunches
 Of warriors, and now and then,
 The flesh of Kings and mighty men;
 And some for breaking of their bones
 With rods of ir'n, by secret ones;

PART III. CANTO II.

285

For thrashing mountains, and with spells
For hallowing carriers packs and bells :
Things that the legend never heard of,
But made the wicked sore-afear'd of.

330

The quacks of Government (who sate
At th' unregarded helm of State,
And understood this wild confusion
Of fatal madness and delusion,

335

Must, sooner than a prodigy,
Portend destruction to be nigh)
Consider'd timely how t' withdraw,
And save their wind-pipes from the law ;

340

For one rencounter at the bar
Was worse than all th' had 'scap'd in war ;
And therefore met in consultation,

To cant and quack upon the nation ;

Not for the sickly patient's sake,

345

Nor what to give, but what to take ;

To feel the pulses of their fees,

More wise than fumbling arteries :

Prolong the snuff of life in pain,

And from the grave recover——Gain.

350

'Mong these there was a politician
With more heads than a beast in vision,

And more intrigues in ev'ry one

Than all the whores of Babylon :

So politic, as if one eye

355

Upon the other were a spy,

That, to trepan the one to think

The other blind, both strove to blink ;

And in his dark pragmatick way,

As busy as a child at play.

360

H' had seen three Governments run down,

And had a hand in ev'ry one ;

Was for 'em and against 'em all,
 But barb'rous when they came to fall :
 For, by trepanning th' old to ruin,
 He made his int'rest with the new one ;
 Play'd true and faithful, though against
 His conscience, and was still advanc'd.
 Far by the witchcraft of rebellion
 Transform'd t' a feeble state-sambelton,
 By giving aim from side to side,
 He never fail'd to save his tide,
 But got the start of eu'ry state,
 And at a change ne'er came too late ;
 Cou'd turn his word, and oath, and faith,
 As many ways as in a lath ;
 By turning, wriggle, like a screw,
 Int' highest trust, and out, for pew.
 But when h' had happily incur'd,
 Instead of hemp, to be prefer'd,
 And pass'd upon a government,
 He play'd his trick, and out he went :
 But being out, and out of hopes
 To mount his ladder (more) of ropes,
 Wou'd strive to raise himself upon
 The publick ruin, and his own ;
 So little did he understand
 The desp'rate feats he took to hand
 For when h' had got himself a name
 For fraud and tricks, he spoil'd his game ;
 Had forc'd his neck into a noose,
 To shew his play at fast and loose ;
 And when he chanc'd t' examine his task
 For art and subtlety, his luck
 So right his judgment was cut for,
 And made a tally to his wit,

PART III. CANTO II.

207

And both together most profound
At deeds of darkness underground;
As th' earth is easiest undetain'd
By vermin impotent and blind.

400

By all these arts, and many more,
H' had practis'd long and much before;
Our state artificer foresaw

Which way the world began to draw.

For as old sinners have all pointed

405

On th' compass in their bones and joints,

Can by their pumps and wheels find

All turns and changes of the wind,

And better than by t' Navigator's tones

Feel in their own the age of mobs;

410

So guilty sinners in a state

Can by their crimes prognosticate,

And in their consciences feel pain

Some days before a show'r of rain.

He therefore wisely east about;

415

All ways he cou'd, t' ensure his throat;

And hither came, t' observe and smoke

What courses other riskers took;

And to the utmost do his best

To save himself, and hang the rest.

420

To match this Saint, there was another

As busy and perverse a Brother,

An haberdasher of small wares

In politicks and state affairs;

More Jew than Rabbi Anshelornst,

425

And better gifted to rebel:

For when h' had taught his tribe to 'uprise

The Cause, aloft, upon one house,

He scor'd to set his own in order,

But try'd another, and went farther;

430

So suddenly addicted still
 To's only principle, his will,
 That whatsoe'er it chanc'd to prove,
 Nor force of argument cou'd move;
 Nor law, nor cavalcade of Ho'born, 435
 Could render half a grain less stubborn.
 For he at any time would hang
 For th' opportunity t' harangue;
 And rather on a gibbet dangle,
 Than miss his dear delight, to wrangle; 440
 In which his parts were so accomplisht,
 That, right or wrong, he ne'er was non-plusht;
 But still his tongue ran on, the less
 Of weight it bore, with greater ease;
 And with its everlasting clack 445
 Set all men's ears upon the rack.
 No sooner cou'd a hint appear,
 But up he started to picqueer,
 And made the stoutest yield to mercy,
 When he engag'd in controversy. 450
 Not by the force of carnal reason,
 But indefatigable teasing;
 With vollies of eternal babble;
 And clamour, more unanswerable.
 For though his topics, frail and weak, 455
 Cou'd ne'er amount above a freak,
 He still maintain'd 'em, like his faults,
 Against the desp'ratest assaults;
 And back'd their feeble want of sense,
 With greater heat and confidence? 460
 As bones of Hectors, when they differ,
 The more they're cudgel'd, grow the stiffer.
 Yet when his profit moderated,
 The fury of his heat abated:

PART III. CANTO II.

289

For nothing but his interest 465

Cou'd lay his Devil of Contest.

It was his choice, or chance, or curse,
T' espouse the Cause for bett'r or worse,

And with his worldly goods and wit,
And soul and body, worship'd it : 470

But when he found the sullen trapes
Possess'd with th' Devil, worms, and claps ;

The w Trojan mare, in foal with Greeks,

Not half so full of jadish tricks ;

Though squeamish in her outward woman, 475

As loose and rampant as Dol Common ;

He still resolv'd to mend the matter,

T' adhere and cleave the obstinater ;

And still the skittisher and looser

Her freaks appear'd, to sit the closer. 480

For fools are stubborn in their way,

As coins are harden'd by th' allay :

And obstinacy's ne'er so stiff

As when 'tis in a wrong belief.

These two, with others, being met, 485

And close in consultation set,

After a discontented pause,

And not without sufficient cause,

The orator we nam'd of late,

Less troubled with the pangs of State 490

Than with his own impatience,

To give himself first audience,

After he had a while look'd wise,

At last broke silence, and the ice.

Quoth he, There's nothing makes me doubt 495

Our last out-going's brought about,

More than to see the characters

Of real jealousies and fears

Not feign'd, as once, but, sadly horrid,
 Scor'd upon ev'ry Member's forehead; 500
 Who, 'cause the clouds are drawn together,
 And threaten sudden change of weather,
 Feel pangs and aches of state-turns,
 And revolutions in their corns;
 And, since our workings-out are cross'd, 505
 Throw up the Cause before 'tis lost.
 Was it to run away we meant,
 When, taking of the Covenant,
 The lamest cripples of the brothers
 Took oaths to run before all others; 510
 But in their own sense only swore
 To strive to run away before;
 And now would prove, that words and oath
 Engage us to renounce them both?
 'Tis true, the Cause is in the lurch, 515
 Between a Right and Mungrel-Church;
 The Presbyter and Independent,
 That stickle which shall make an end on't;
 As 'twas made out to us the last
 Expedient—(I mean st Marg'ret's Fast,) 520
 When Providence had been suborn'd,
 What answer was to be return'd.
 Else why should tumults fright us now,
 We have so many times gone through?
 And understand as well to tame, 525
 As when they serve our turns t' inflame:
 Have prov'd how inconsiderable
 Are all engagements of the rabble,
 Whose frenzies must be reconcil'd,
 With drums and rattles, like a child; 530
 But never prov'd so prosperous,
 As when they were led on by us:

PART III. CANTO II.

291

For all our scourging of religion
 Began with tumult and sedition;
 When hurricanes of fierce commotion 535
 Became strong motives to devotion;
 (As carnal seamen, in a storm,
 Turn pious converts, and reform;)
 When rusty weapons, with chalk'd edges,
 Maintain'd our feeble privileges; 540
 And brown-bills levy'd in the City,
 Made bills to pass the Grand Committee;
 When zeal, with aged clubs and gleaves,
 Gave chace to rockets and white sleeves,
 And made the Church, and State, and Laws, 545
 Submit t' old iron and the Cause.
 And as we thriv'd by tumults then,
 So might we better now agen,
 If we knew how, as then we did,
 To use them rightly in our need; 550
 Tumults, by which the mutinous
 Betray themselves instead of us.
 The hollow-hearted, disaffected,
 And close malignant are detected,
 Who lay their lives and fortunes down 555
 For pledges to secure our own;
 And freely sacrifice their ears
 T' appease our jealousies and fears;
 And yet, for all these providences
 W' are offer'd, if we had our senses, 560
 We idly sit like stupid blockheads,
 Our hands committed to our pockets;
 And nothing but our tongues at large,
 To get the wretches a discharge:
 Like men condemn'd to thunder-bolts, 565
 Who, ere the blow, become mere dolls;

Or fools besotted with their crimes,
 That know not how to shift betimes,
 And neither have the hearts to stay,
 Nor wit enough to run away ; 570
 Who, if we cou'd resolve on either,
 Might stand or fall at least together ;
 No mean or trivial solaces
 To partners in extreme distress ;
 Who us'd to lessen their despairs, 575
 By parting them int' equal shares ;
 As if the more they were to bear,
 They felt the weight the easier ;
 And ev'ry one the gentler hung,
 The more he took his turn among. 580
 But 'tis not come to that, as yet,
 If we had courage left, or wit ;
 Who, when our fate can be no worse,
 Are fitted for the bravest course ;
 Have time to rally, and prepare 585
 Our last and best defence, despair :
 Despair, by which the gallant'st feats
 Have been atchiev'd in greatest straits,
 And horrid'st danger safely wav'd,
 By being courageously out-brav'd ; 590
 As wounds by wider wounds are heal'd,
 And poisons by themselves expell'd :
 And so they might be now agen,
 If we were, what we shou'd be, men ;
 And not so dully desperate, 595
 To side against ourselves with Fate ;
 As criminals, condemn'd to suffer,
 Are blinded first, and then turn'd over.
 This comes of breaking Covenants,
 And setting up Exauns of Saints. 600

PART III. CANTO II.

293

That fine, like aldermen, for grace,
 To be excus'd the efficacy.
 For spiritual men are too transcendent,
 That mount their banks for Independent,
 To hang like *MAHOMET* in th' air, 605
 Or *St. IGNATIUS* at his prayer,
 By pure geometry, and hate
 Dependence upon Church or State;
 Disdain the pedantry o' th' letter;
 And since obedience is better 610
 (The Scripture says) than sacrifice,
 Presume the less on't will suffice;
 And scorn to have the moderat'st stints
 Prescrib'd their peremptory hints,
 Or any opinion, true or false, 615
 Declar'd as such, in doctrinals:
 But left at large to make their best on,
 Without b'ing call'd t' account or question,
 Interpret all the spleen reveals;
 As *WHITTINGTON* explain'd the bells; 620
 And bid themselves turn back agen
 Lord May'rs of New Jerusalem;
 But look so big and over-grown,
 They scorn their edifiers t' own,
 Who taught them all their sprinkling lessons, 625
 Their tones, and sanctified expressions
 Bestow'd their Gifts upon a Saint,
 Like Charity on those that want;
 And learn'd th' apocryphal bigots
 T' inspire themselves with short-hand notes; 630
 For which they scorn and hate them worse
 Than dogs and cats do sow-gelders.
 For who first bred them up to pray,
 And teach, the House of Commons Way?

Where had they all their gifted phrases, 633
 But from our CALAMYS and CASES ?
 Without whose sprinkling and sowing,
 Who e'er had heard of NYE or OWEN ?
 Their dispensations had been stifled,
 But for our ADONIRAM BYFIELD ; 640
 And had they not begun the war,
 Th' had ne'er been sainted, as they are ;
 For Saints in peace degenerate,
 And dwindle down to reprobate ;
 Their zeal corrupts, like standing water, 645
 In th' intervals of war and slaughter ;
 Abates the sharpness of its edge,
 Without the power of sacrilege.
 And though they've tricks to cast their sins
 As easy as π serpents do their skins, 650
 That in a while grow out agen,
 In peace they turn mere carnal men,
 And from the most refin'd of saints,
 As π naturally grow miscreants,
 As barnacles turn SOLAND geese 655
 In th' Islands of the ORCADES.
 Their dispensation's but a ticket,
 For their conforming to the wicked ;
 With whom the greatest difference
 Lies more in words, and shew, than sense. 660
 For as the Pope, that keeps the gate
 Of Heaven, wears three crowns of state :
 So he that keeps the gate of Hell,
 Proud β CERBERUS, wears three heads as well :
 And if the world has any troth, 665
 Some have been canoniz'd in both.
But that which does them greatest harm,
Their spiritual gizzards are too warm,

PART III. CANTO II.

295

Which puts the over-heated sots
 In fevers still, like other goats. 670
 For though the Whore bends Hereticks
 With flames of fire, like crooked sticks,
 Our Schismaticks so vastly differ,
 Th' hotter th' are, they grow the stiffer;
 Still setting off their spiritual goods 675
 With fierce and pertinacious feuds.
 For zeal's a dreadful termagant,
 That teaches Saints to tear and rant,
 And Independents to profess
 The doctrine of dependences : 680
 Turns meek, and secret, sneaking ones,
 To raw-heads fierce and bloody-bones :
 And, not content with endless quarrels
 Against the wicked, and their morals,
 The c GIBELLINES, for want of GUELPHS, 685
 Divert their rage upon themselves.
 For now the war is not between
 The Brethren and the Men of Sin,
 But Saint and Saint, to spill the blood
 Of one another's brotherhood ; 690
 Where neither side can lay pretence
 To liberty of conscience,
 Or zealous suffering for the Cause,
 To gain one groat's-worth of applause ;
 For though endur'd with resolution, 695
 'Twill ne'er amount to persecution.
 Shall precious Saints, and secret ones,
 Break one another's outward bones,
 And eat the flesh of Brethren,
 Instead of Kings and mighty men ? 700
 When fiends agree among themselves,
Shall they be found the greatest elves?

When BELL's at union with the DRAGON,
 And BAAL-PEOR friends with DAGON,
 When savage bears agree with bears, 705
 Shall secret ones lug Saints by th' ears,
 And not atone their fatal wrath,
 When common danger threatens both?
 Shall mastiffs, by the collar pull'd,
 Engag'd with bulls, let go their hold, 710
 And Saints, whose necks are pawn'd at stake,
 No notice of the danger take?
 But though no pow'r of Heav'n or Hell
 Can pacify phanatick zeal,
 Who wou'd not guess there might be hopes, 715
 The fear of gallowses and ropes,
 Before their eyes, might reconcile
 Their animosities a while;
 At least until th' had a clear stage,
 And equal freedom to engage, 720
 Without the danger of surprize
 By both our common enemies?
 This none but we alone cou'd doubt,
 Who understand their workings out;
 And know them, both in soul and conscience, 725
 Giv'n up t' as reprobate a nonsense
 As spiritual out-laws, whom the pow'r
 Of miracle can ne'er restore:
 We, whom at first they set up under,
 In revelation only of plunder, 730
 Who since have had so many trials
 Of their encroaching self-denials,
 That rook'd upon us with design
 To out-reform, and undermine;
 Took all our interest and commands, 735
 Perfidiously out of our hands;

PART III. CANTO II.

297

Involv'd us in the guilt of blood
 Without the motive gains allow'd,
 And made us serve as ministerial,
 Like younger sons of Father BELIAL ; 740
 And yet, for all th' inhuman wrong
 Th' had done us and the Cause so long,
 We never fail to carry on
 The work still as we had begun ;
 But true and faithfully obey'd 745
 And neither preach'd them hurt, nor pray'd ;
 Nor troubled them to crop our ears,
 Nor hang us like the cavaliers ;
 Nor put them to the charge of gaols,
 To find us pill'ries and cart's-tails, 750
 Or hangman's wages, which the State
 Was forc'd (before them) to be at,
 That cut, like tallies, to the stumps,
 Our ears for keeping true accompts,
 And burnt our vessels, like a new 755
 Seal'd peck, or bushel, for b'ing true ;
 But hand in hand, like faithful brothers,
 Held for the Cause against all others,
 Disdaining equally to yield
 One syllable of what we held, 760
 And though we differ'd now and then
 'Bout outward things, and outward men,
 Our inward men, and constant frame
 Of spirit, still were near the same ;
 And till they first began to cant 765
 And sprinkle down the Covenant,
 We ne'er had call in any place,
 Nor dream'd of teaching down free grace,
 But join'd our gifts perpetually
Against the common enemy, 770

Although 'twas ours and their opinion,
 Each other's Church was but a REX MON:
 And yet, for all this gospel-union,
 And outward shew of Church-communion,
 They'll ne'er admit us to our shares 775
 Of ruling Church or State affairs;
 Nor give us leave t' absolve, or sentence
 T' our own conditions of repentance;
 But shar'd our dividend o' th' Crown,
 We had so painfully preach'd down; 780
 And forc'd us, though against the grain,
 T' have calls to teach it up again:
 For 'twas but justice to restore
 The wrongs we had receiv'd before;
 And when 'twas held forth in our way, 785
 W' had been ungrateful not to pay;
 Who, for the right w' have done the nation,
 Have earn'd our temporal salvation;
 And put our vessels in a way
 Once more to come again in play. 790
 For if the turning of us out
 Has brought this Providence about,
 And that our only suffering
 Is able to bring in the King,
 What would our actions not have done, 795
 Had we been suffer'd to go on?
 And therefore may pretend t' a share,
 At least, in carrying on th' affair,
 But whether that be so, or not,
 W' have done enough to have it thought; 800
 And that's as good as if w' had done't,
 And easier pass't upon account:
 For if it be but half deny'd,
 'Tis half as good as justifi'd.

PART III. CANTO II.

299

The world is nat'rally averse 805

To all the truth it sees or hears;

But swallows nonsense, and a lie,

With greediness and gluttony;

And though it have the pique, and long,

'Tis still for something in the wrong; 810

As women long, when they're with child,

For things extravagant and wild;

For meats ridiculous and fulsome,

But seldom any thing that's wholesome;

And, like the world, men's jobbernoles 815

Turn round upon their ears, the poles;

And what they're confidently told,

By no sense else can be control'd.

And this, perhaps, may prove the means

Once more to hedge-in Providence, 820

For as relapses make diseases

More desp'rate than their first accesses,

If we but get again in pow'r,

Our work is easier than before;

And we more ready and expert 825

For th' mystery to do our part.

We, who did rather undertake

The first war to create than make,

And when of nothing 'twas begun,

Rais'd funds as strange to carry 't on; 830

Trepann'd the State, and fac'd it down

With plots and projects of our own;

And if we did such feats at first,

What can we now we're better vers'd?

Who have a freer latitude, 835

Than sinners give themselves, allow'd,

And therefore likeliest to bring in,

On fairest terms, our discipline;

To which it was reveal'd long since,
We were ordain'd by Providence ;
When d three Saints Ears, our predecessors,
The Cause's primitive Confessors,
B'ing crucify'd, the nation stood
In just so many years of blood ;
'That, multiply'd by six, exprest
The perfect number of the beast,
And prov'd that we must be the men
To bring this work about agen ;
And those who laid the first foundation,
Compleat the thorough Reformation :
For who have gifts to carry on
So great a work, but we alone ?
What churches have such able pastors,
And precious, powerful, preaching masters ?
Possess'd with absolute dominions
O'er brethren's purses and opinions ?
And trusted with the double keys
Of Heaven and their warehouses ;
Who, when the Cause is in distress,
Can furnish out what sums they please,
That brooding lie in bankers' hands,
To be dispos'd at their commands ;
And daily increase and multiply,
With doctrine, use, and usury :
Can fetch in parties (as in war
All other heads of cattle are)
From th' enemy of all religions,
As well as high and low conditions,
And share them, from blue ribbands, down
To all blue aprons in the town ;
From ladies hurried in calleches,
With cor'nets at their footmens' breeches,

PART III. CANTO II.

301

To bawds as fat as Mother Nab;
 All guts and belly, like a crab.
 Our party's great, and better ty'd 875
 With oaths and trade than any side,
 Has one considerable improvement,
 To double fortify the Cov'nant:
 I mean our Covenant to purchase
 Delinquents titles, and the Churches; 880
 That pass in sale, from hand to hand,
 Among ourselves, for current land;
 And rise or fall, like Indian actions,
 According to the rate of factions;
 Our best reserve for Reformation, 885
 When new out-goings give occasion;
 That keeps the loins of Brethren girt
 The Covenant (their creed) t' assert;
 And when th' have pack'd a Parliament,
 Will once more try th' expedient: 890
 Who can already muster friends,
 To serve for members, to our ends,
 That represent no part o' th' nation,
 But a Fisher's-Folly Congregation;
 Are only tools to our intrigues, 895
 And sit like geese to hatch our eggs;
 Who, by their precedents of wit,
 T' out-fast, out-loiter, and out-sit,
 Can order matters underhand,
 To put all bus'ness to a stand; 900
 Lay publick bills aside for private,
 And make 'em one another drive out;
 Divert the great and necessary,
 With trifles to contest and vary;
 And make the nation represent, 905
 And serve for us, in Parliament:

Cut out more work than can be done
 In f PLATO's year, but finish none ;
 Unless it be the Bulls of LENTHAL,
 That always pass'd for fundamental ; 910
 Can set up grandee against grandee,
 To squander time away, and bandy ;
 Make Lords and Commoners lay sieges
 To one another's privileges,
 And, rather than compound the quarrel, 915
 Engage to th' inevitable peril
 Of both their ruins ; th' only scope
 And consolation of our hope ;
 Who though we do not play the game,
 Assist as much by giving aim : 920
 Can introduce our ancient arts,
 For heads of factions t' act their parts ;
 Know what a leading voice is worth,
 A seconding, a third, or fourth ;
 How much a casting voice comes to, 925
 That turns up trump, of ay, or no ;
 And, by adjusting all at th' end,
 Share ev'ry one his dividend :
 An art that so much study cost,
 And now's in danger to be lost, 930
 Unless our ancient virtuosos,
 That found it out, get into th' Houses.
 These are the courses that we took
 To carry things by hook or crook ;
 And practis'd down from forty-four, 935
 Until they turn'd us out of door :
 Besides the herds of Boutefeus
 We set on work without the House ;
 When ev'ry knight and citizen
 Kept legislative journeymen, 940

PART III. CANTO II.

308

To bring them in intelligence
 From all points of the rabble's sense,
 And fill the lobbies of both Houses
 With politick important buzzes :
 Set up committees of cabals, 915
 To pack designs without the walls ;
 Examine, and draw up all news,
 And fit it to our present use.
 Agree upon the plot o' th' farce,
 And ev'ry one his part rehearse. 920
 Make Q's of answers, to way-lay
 What th' other parties like to say :
 What repartees, and smart reflections,
 Shall be return'd to all objections ;
 And who shall break the master-jest, 925
 And what, and how, upon the rest :
 Held pamphlets out, with safe editions,
 Of proper slanders and seditions ;
 And treason for a token send,
 By Letter to a Country Friend ; 930
 Disperse lampoons, the only wit
 That men, like burglary, commit ;
 Wit falser than a padder's face,
 That all its owner does betrays ;
 Who therefore dares not trust it when 935
 He's in his calling to be seen ;
 Disperse the dung on barren earth,
 To bring new weeds of discord forth ;
 Be sure to keep up congregations,
 In spite of laws and proclamations : 940
 For Charlatans can do no good
 Until they're mounted in a crowd ;
 And when they're punish'd, all the hurt
 Is but to fare the better for't ;

As long as confessors are sure	975
Of double pay for all th' endure ;	
And what they earn in persecution,	
Are paid t' a groat in contribution.	
Whence some Tub-Holders-forth have made	
In powd'ring-tubs their richest trade ;	980
And while they kept their shops in prison,	
Have found their prices strangely risen.	
Disdain to own the least regret	
For all the Christian blood w' have let ;	
'Twill save our credit, and maintain	985
Our title to do so again ;	
That needs not cost one dram of sense,	
But pertinacious impudence.	
Our constancy t' our principles,	
In time will wear out all things else ;	990
Like marble statues rubb'd in pieces	
With gallantry of pilgrims' kisses ;	
While those who turn and wind their oaths,	
Have swell'd and sunk, like other froths ;	
Prevail'd a while, but 'twas not long	995
Before from world to world they swung :	
As they had turn'd from side to side,	
And as the changelings liv'd, they dy'd.	
This said, th' impatient States-monger	
Could now contain himself no longer ;	1000
Who had not spar'd to shew his piques	
Against th' haranguer's politicks,	
With smart remarks of leering faces,	
And annotations of grimaces.	
After h' had administer'd a dose	1005
Of snuff-mundungus to his nose,	
And powder'd th' inside of his skull,	
Instead of th' outward jobbermol,	

PART III. CANTO II.

305

He shook it with a scornful look
 On th' adversary, and thus he spoke : 1010
 In dressing a calves head, although
 The tongue and brains together go,
 Both keep so great a distance here,
 'Tis strange if ever they come near ;
 For who did ever play his gambols 1015
 With such insufferable rambles ?
 To make the bringing in the KING,
 And keeping of him out, one thing ?
 Which none could do, but those that swore
 T' as point-blank nonsense heretofore : 1020
 That to defend, was to invade ;
 And to assassinate, to aid :
 Unless, because you drove him out,
 (And that was never made a doubt,) 1025
 No pow'r is able to restore,
 And bring him in, but on your score :
 A spiritual doctrine, that conduces
 Most properly to all your uses.
 'Tis true, a scorpion's oil is said
 To cure the wounds the vermine made ; 1030
 And weapons, drest with salves, restore
 And heal the hurts they gave before ;
 But whether Presbyterians have
 So much good nature as the salve,
 Or virtue in them as the vermine, 1035
 Those who have try'd them can determine.
 Indeed, 'tis pity you should miss
 Th' arrears of all your services,
 And for th' eternal obligation
 Y' have laid upon th' ungrateful nation, 1040
 Be us'd so unconscionably hard,
 As not to find a just reward,

For letting rapine loose, and murther,
 To rage just so far, but no further ;
 And setting all the land on fire, 1045
 To burn't to a scantling, but no higher ;
 For vent'ring to assassinate,
 And cut the throats, of Church and State,
 And not be allow'd the fittest men
 To take the charge of both agen : 1050
 Especially, that have the grace
 Of self-denying, gifted face ;
 Who when your projects have miscarry'd,
 Can lay them, with undaunted forehead,
 On those you painfully trepann'd, 1055
 And sprinkled in at second hand ;
 As we have been, to share the guilt
 Of Christian Blood, devoutly spilt ;
 For so our ignorance was flamm'd
 To damn ourselves, t' avoid being damn'd ; 1060
 Till finding your old foe, the hangman,
 Was like to lurch you at back-gammon,
 And win your necks upon the set,
 As well as ours, who did but bet,
 (For he had drawn your ears before, 1065
 And nick'd them on the self-same score,)
 We threw the box and dice away,
 Before y' had lost us, at foul play ;
 And brought you down to rook, and lie,
 And fancy only, on the by ; 1070
 Redeem'd your forfeit jobbernoles
 From perching upon lofty poles ;
 And rescu'd all your outward traitors
 From hanging up like aligators ;
 For which ingeniously y' have shew'd 1075
 Your Presbyterian gratitude ;

PART III. CANTO II.

307

Would freely have paid us home in kind,
 And not have been one rope behind.
 Those were your motives to divide,
 And scruple, on the other side. 1080
 To turn your zealous frauds, and force,
 To fits of conscience and remorse ;
 To be convinc'd they were in vain,
 And face about for new again ; 1085
 For truth no more unveil'd your eyes,
 Than maggots are convinc'd to flies ;
 And therefore all your lights and calls
 Are but apocryphal and false,
 To charge us with the consequences
 Of all your native insolences, 1090
 That to your own imperious wills
 Laid Law and Gospel neck and heels ;
 Corrupted the Old Testament,
 To serve the New for precedent ;
 T' amend its errors, and defects, 1095
 With murder, and rebellion texts ;
 Of which there is not any one
 In all the Book to sow upon :
 And therefore (from your tribe) the Jews
 Held Christian doctrine forth, and use ; 1100
 As Mahomet (your chief) began
 To mix them in the Alchoran :
 Denounc'd and pray'd, with fierce devotion,
 And bended elbows on the cushion ;
 Stole from the beggars all your tones, 1105
 And gifted mortifying groans ;
 Had Lights where better eyes were blind,
 As pigs are said to see the wind :
 Fill'd Bedlam with predestination,
 And Knights-bridge with illumination : 1110

Made children, with your tones, to run for't,
 As bad as bloody-bones, or LUNSFORD :
 While women, great with child, miscarry'd,
 For being to malignants marry'd :
 Transform'd all wives to DALILAHs 1115
 Whose husbands were not for the Cause ;
 And turn'd the men to ten horn'd cattle,
 Because they came not out to battle :
 Made taylors' prentices turn heroes,
 For fear of being transform'd to, MEROS : 1120
 And rather forfeit their indentures,
 Than not espouse the Saints' adventures.
 Could transubstantiate, metamorphose,
 And charm whole herds of beasts, like Orpheus ;
 Inchant the King's and Churches lands 1125
 T' obey and follow your commands ;
 And settle on a new freehold,
 As MARCLY-HILL had done of old :
 Could turn the Covenant, and translate
 The gospel into spoons and plate : 1130
 Expound upon all merchants' cashes,
 And open th' intricateſt places :
 Could catechize a money-box,
 And prove all powches orthodox ;
 Until the Cause became a DAMON, 1135
 And PYTHIAS the wicked Mammon.
 And yet, in spite of all your charms
 To conjure legion up in arms,
 And raise more devils in the rout
 Than e'er y' were able to cast out, 1140
 Y' have been reduc'd, and by those fools
 Bred up (you say) in your own schools ;
 Who, though but gifted at your feet,
Have made it plain, they have more wit ;

PART III. CANTO II.

309

By whom y' have been so oft trepann'd, 1145
 And held forth out of all command,
 Out-gifted, out-impuls'd, out-done,
 And out-reveal'd at carryings-on ;
 Of all your dispensations worm'd,
 Out-Providenc'd, and out-reform'd ; 1150
 Ejected out of Church and State,
 And all things, but the peoples' hate ;
 And spirited out of th' enjoyments
 Of precious, edifying employments,
 By those who lodg'd their Gifts and Graces, 1155
 Like better bowlers, in your places ;
 All which you bore with resolution,
 Charg'd on th' accompt of persecution ;
 And though most righteously oppress,
 Against your wills, still acquiesc'd ; 1160
 And never hum'd and hal'd sedition,
 Nor snuffed treason, nor misprision.
 That is, because you never durst ;
 For had you preach'd and pray'd your worst,
 Alas ! you were no longer able 1165
 To raise your posse of the rabble :
 One single red-coat centinel
 Out-charm'd the magick of the spell ;
 And, with his squirt-fire, could disperse
 Whole troops with chapter rais'd and verse. 1170
 We knew too well those tricks of yours,
 To leave it ever in your powers ;
 Or trust our safeties, or undoings,
 To your disposing of out-goings ;
 Or to your ordering Providence, 1175
 One farthing's-worth of consequence.
 For had you pow'r to undermine,
 Or wit to carry a design,

Or correspondence to trepan,
 Inveigle, or betray one man, 1180
 There's nothing else that intervenes,
 And bars your zeal to use the means;
 And therefore wond'rous like, no doubt,
 To bring in Kings, or keep them out,
 Brave undertakers to restore, 1185
 That cou'd not keep yourselves in pow'r;
 T' advance the int'rests of the Crown,
 That wanted wit to keep your own!
 'Tis true, you have (for I'd be loth
 To wrong ye) done your parts in both, 1190
 To keep him out, and bring him in,
 As grace is introduc'd by sin;
 For 'twas your zealous want of sense,
 And sanctify'd impertinence,
 Your carrying business in a huddle, 1195
 That forc'd our rulers to new-model;
 Oblig'd the State to tack about,
 And turn you, root and branch, all out;
 To reformado, one and all,
 T' your great & Croysado General. 1200
 Your greedy slav'ring to devour,
 Before 'twas in your clutches, pow'r,
 That sprung the game you were to set,
 Before y' had time to draw the net;
 Your spight to see the Churches' lands 1205
 Divided into other hands,
 And all your sacrilegious ventures
 Laid out in tickets and debentures;
 Your envy to be sprinkled down,
 By Under-Churches in the town; 1210
 And no course us'd to stop their mouths,
 Nor th' Independents' spreading growth:

PART III. CANTO II.

511

All which consider'd, 'tis most true
 None bring him in so much as you ;
 Who have prevail'd beyond their plots, 1215
 Their midnight juntos, and seal'd knots ;
 That thrive more by your zealous piques,
 Than all their own rash politicks ;
 And you this way may claim a share
 In carrying (as you brag) th' affair ; 1220
 Else frogs and toads, that croak'd the Jews
 From PHARAOH and his brick-kilns loose,
 And flies and mange, that set them free
 From task-masters and slavery,
 Were likelier to do the feat, 1225
 In any indiff'rent man's conceit :
 For who e'er heard of restoration
 Untill your thorough Reformation ?
 That is, the King's and Churches' land
 Were sequester'd int' other hands : 1230
 For only then, and not before,
 Your eyes were open'd to restore.
 And when the work was carrying on,
 Who cross'd it, but yourselves alone ?
 As by a world of hints appears, 1235
 All plain and extant as your ears.

But first, o' th' first : The Isle of WIGHT
 Will rise up, if you should deny't ;
 Where HENDERSON, and th' other masses,
 Were sent to cap texts, and put cases ; 1240
 To pass for deep and learned scholars,
 Although but paltry ^b Ob and Sollers :
 As if th' unseasonable fools
 Had been a coursing in the schools ;
 Until th' had prov'd the Devil author 1245
 O' th' Covenant, and the Cause his daughter,

For when they charg'd him with the guilt
 Of all the blood that had been spilt,
 They did not mean he wrought th' effusion,
 In person, like i Sir PRIDE, or HUGMSON, 1250
 But only those who first begun
 The quarrel were by him set on ;
 And who could those be but the Saints,
 Those Reformation Termagants?

But e'er this pass'd, the wise debate 1255
 Spent so much time, it grew too late ;
 For OLIVER had gotten ground,
 T' inclose him with his warriors round ;
 Had brought his Providence about,
 And turn'd th' untimely sophists out, 1260
 Nor had the UXBRIDGE bus'ness less
 Of nonsense in't, or sottishness,
 When from a scoundrel Holder-forth,
 The scum as well as son o' th' earth,
 Your mighty Senators took law ; 1265
 At his command, were forc'd t' withdraw,
 And sacrifice the peace o' th' nation
 To doctrine, use and application.
 So when the Scots, your constant cronies,
 Th' espousers of your Cause and monies, 1270
 Who had so often, in your aid,
 So many ways been soundly paid,
 Came in at last for better ends,
 To prove themselves your trusty friends,
 You basely left them, and the Church 1275
 They train'd you up to, in the lurch,
 And suffer'd your own tribe of Christians
 To fall before, as true Philistines.

This shews what utensils y' have been,
To bring the King's concernments in ; 1280

PART III. CANTO II.

313

Which is so far from being true,
That none but he can bring in you :
And if he take you into trust,
Will find you most exactly just :
Such as will punctually repay 1285
With double interest, and betray.

Not that I think those pantomimes,
Who vary action with the times,
Are less ingenious in their art,
Than those who dully act one part; 1290
Or those who turn from side to side,
More guilty than the wind and tide.
All countries are a wise man's home,
And so are governments to some,
Who change them for the same intrigues 1295
That statesmen use in breaking leagues ;
While others, in old faiths and troths,
Look odd as out-of-fashion'd cloths ;
And nastier in an old opinion,
Than those who never shift their linnen. 1300

For true and faithful's sure to lose,
Which way soever the game goes ;
And whether parties lose or win,
Is always nick'd, or else hedg'd in :
While pow'r usurp'd, like stol'n delight, 1305
Is more bewitching than the right ;
And when the times begin to alter,
None rise so high as from the halter.

And so may we, if w' have but sense
To use the necessary means ; 1310
And not your usual stratagems
On one another, Lights and Dreams :
To stand on terms as positive,
As if we did not take, but give :

Set up the Covenant on crutches, 1315
 'Gainst those who have us in their clutches,
 And dream of pulling churches down,
 Before w' are sure to prop our own :
 Your constant method of proceeding,
 Without the carnal means of heeding ; 1320
 Who 'twixt your inward sense and outward,
 Are worse, than if y' had none, accoutred.
 I grant, all courses are in vain,
 Unless we can get in again ;
 The only way that's left us now ; 1325
 But all the difficulty's, How ?
 'Tis true, w' have money, th' only pow'r
 That ail mankind falls down before ;
 Money, that, like the swords of kings,
 Is the last reason of all things ; 1330
 And therefore need not doubt our play
 Has all advantages that way ;
 As long as men have faith to sell,
 And meet with those that can pay well ;
 Whose half-starv'd pride, and avarice, 1335
 One Church and State will not suffice
 T' expose to sale, beside the wages
 Of storing plagues to after-ages.
 Nor is our money less our own,
 Than 'twas before we laid it down ; 1340
 For 'twill return, and turn t' account,
 If we are brought, in play upon't :
 Or but, by casting knaves, get in,
 What pow'r can hinder us to win ?
 We know the arts we us'd before, 1345
 In peace and war, and something more ;
 And by th' unfortunate events,
 Can mend our next experiments :

PART III. CANTO II.

315

For when w' are taken into trust,
How easy are the wisest choust ? 1330

Who see but th' outsides of our feats,
And not their secret springs and weights ;
And while they're busy at their ease,
Can carry what designs we please.

How easy is it to serve for agents, 1355
To prosecute our old engagements ?

To keep the Good Old Cause on foot,
And present power from taking root ?

Inflame them both with false alarms
Of plots and parties taking arms ; 1360

To keep the Nation's wounds too wide
From healing up of side to side ;

Profess the passionat'st concerns

For both their interests by turns ;

The only way to improve our own, 1365
By dealing faithfully with none ;

(As bowls run true, by being made
On purpose false, and to be sway'd :)
For if we should be true to either,

'Twould turn us out of both together ; 1370
And therefore have no other means

To stand upon our own defence,

But keeping up our ancient party

In vigour, confident and hearty :

To reconcile our late dissenters, 1375
Our brethren, though by other venters ;

Unite them, and their different maggots,

As long and short sticks are in faggots,

And make them join again as close

As when they first began t' espouse ; 1380
Erect them into separate

New Jewish tribes, in Church and State ;

To join in marriage and commerce,
 And only among themselves converse ;
 And all that are not of their mind, 1385
 Make enemies to all mankind :
 Take all religions in and stickle
 From Conclave down to Conventicle ;
 Agreeing still, or disagreeing,
 According to the Light in being. 1390
 Sometimes for liberty of conscience,
 And spiritual mis-rule, in one sense ;
 But in another quite contrary,
 As dispensations chance to vary ;
 And stand for, as the times will bear it, 1395
 All contradictions of the Spirit :
 Protect their emissaries, empower'd
 To preach sedition and the word ;
 And when they're hamper'd by the laws,
 Release the lab'ers for the Cause, 1400
 And turn the persecution back
 On those that made the first attack ;
 To keep them equally in awe,
 From breaking or maintaining law :
 And when they have their fits too soon, 1405
 Before the full-tides of the moon,
 Put off their zeal t' a fitter season
 For sowing faction in and treason ;
 And keep them hooded, and their Churches,
 Like hawks from baiting on their perches, 1410
 That, when the blessed time shall come
 Of quitting BABYLON and ROME,
 They may be ready to restore
 Their own Fifth Monarchy once more.
 Meanwhile be better arm'd to fence 1415
 Against revolts of Providence.

PART III. CANTO II.

317

By watching narrowly, and snapping
 All blind sides of it, as they happen :
 For if success could make us Saints,
 Or ruin turn'd us miscreants : 1420
 A scandal that wou'd fall too hard
 Upon a few, and unprepar'd.

These are the courses we must run,
 Spight of our hearts, or be undone ;
 And not to stand on terms and freaks, 1425
 Before we have secur'd our necks ;
 But do our work, as out of sight,
 As stars by day, and suns by night ;
 All licence of the people own,

In opposition to the Crown ; 1430

And for the Crown as fiercely side,
 The head and body to divide ;
 The end of all we first design'd,
 And all that yet remains behind : 1435

Be sure to spare no publick rapine,
 On all emergencies, that happen ;
 For 'tis as easy to supplant
 Authority as men in want ;

As some of us, in trusts, have made
 The one hand with the other trade ; 1440

Gain'd vastly by their joint endeavour ;
 The right a thief ; the left receiver ;
 And what the one, by tricks, forestall'd,
 The other, by as sly, retail'd.

For gain has wonderful effects 1445

T' improve the Factory of Sects ;
 The rule of faith in all professions.

And great DIANA of the EPHESIANS ;

Whence turning of Religion's made

The means to turn and wind a trade : 1450

And though some change it for the worse,
 They put themselves into a course ;
 And draw in store of customers,
 To thrive the better in commerce :
 For all Religions flock together ,
 Like tame and wild fowl of a feather ;
 To nab the itches of their sects,
 As jades do one another's necks.
 Hence 'tis, Hypocrisy as well
 Will serve t' improve a Church as ZEAL :
 As Persecution or Promotion,
 Do equally advance Devotion.

Let business, like ill watches, go
 Sometime too fast, sometime too slow ;
 For things in order are put out
 So easy, Ease itself will do't ;
 But when the feat's design'd and meant,
 What miracle can bar th' event ?
 For 'tis more easy to betray,
 Than ruin any other way.
 All possible occasions start
 The weighty'st matters to divert ;
 Obstruct, perplex, distract, intangle,
 And lay perpetual trains to wrangle.
 But in affairs of less import,
 That neither do us good nor hurt,
 And they receive as little by,
 Out-fawn as much, and out-comply ;
 And seem as scrupulously just,
 To bait our hooks for greater trust ;
 But still be careful to cry down
 All publick actions, though our own :
The least miscarriage aggravate,
And charge it all upon the State :

PART III. CANTO II.

319

Express the horrid'st detestation, 1485

And pity the distracted nation :

Tell stories scandalous and false,

I' th' proper language of cabals,

Where all a subtle statesman says,

Is half in words, and half in face ; 1490

(As Spaniards talk in dialogues

Of heads and shoulders, nods and shrugs:)

Entrust it under solemn vows

Of mum, and silence, and the rose,

To be retail'd again in whispers, 1495

For th' easy credulous to disperse.

Thus far the Statesman—When a shout,

Heard at a distance, put him out ;

And straight another, all aghast,

Rush'd in with equal fear and haste ; 1500

Who star'd about, as pale as death,

And, for a while, as out of breath ;

Till having gather'd up his wits,

He thus began his tale by fits,

That k beastly rabble—that came down 1505

From all the garrets—in the town,

And stalls, and shop-boards—in vast swarms,

With new-chalk'd bills—and rusty arms,

To cry the Cause—up, heretofore,

And bawl the Bishops—out of door, 1510

Are now drawn up—in greater shoals,

To roast—and broil us on the coals,

And all the Grandees—of our Members

Are carbonading—on the embers ;

Knights, Citizens, and Burgesses— 1515

Held forth by Rumps—of Pigs and Geese,

That serve for Characters—and Badges

To represent their Personages :

Each bonfire is a funeral pile,
 In which they roast, and scorch, and broil, 1520
 And ev'ry representative
 Have vow'd to roast—and broil alive :
 And 'tis a miracle, we are not
 Already sacrific'd incarnate.
 For while we wrangle here, and jar, 1525
 W' are grill'd all at TEMPLE-BAR :
 Some on the sign-post of an ale-house,
 Hang in effigy, on the gallows ;
 Made up of rags, to personate
 Respective Officers of State ; 1530
 That henceforth they may stand reputed,
 Proscrib'd in law, and executed ;
 And while the Work is carrying on,
 Be ready lifted under ^l DUN,
 That worthy patriot, once the bellows, 1535
 And tinder-box, of all his fellows ;
 The activ'st Member of the Five,
 As well as the most primitive ;
 Who, for his faithful service then,
 Is chosen for a Fifth agen : 1540
 (For since the State has made a Quint
 Of Generals, he's lifted in't.)
 This worthy, as the world will say,
 Is paid in specie, his own way ;
 For, moulded to the life in clouts, 1545
 Th' have pick'd from dung-hills hereabouts,
 He's mounted on a hazel bavin,
 A cropp'd malignant baker gave 'm ;
 And to the largest bone-fire riding,
 They've roasted ^m COOK already and PRIDE in ;
 On whom in equipage and state, 1551
 His scarecrow fellow-members wait,

And march in order, two and two,
 As at thanksgivings th' us'd to do ;
 Each in a tatter'd talisman, 1555
 Like vermin in effigie slain.

But (what's more dreadful than the rest)
 Those Rumps are but the tail o' th' Beast,
 Set up by Popish engineers,
 As by the crackers plainly appears ; 1560
 For none but Jesuits have a mission
 To preach the faith with ammunition,
 And propagate the Church with powder :
 Their founder was a blown-up ⁿ Soldier.
 These spiritual pioneers o' th' Whore's, 1565
 That have the charge of all her stores,
 Since first they fail'd in their designs,
 To take in Heav'n by springing mines,
 And with unanswerable barrels
 Of gunpowder dispute their quarrels, 1570
 Now take a course more practicable,
 By laying trains to fire the rabble,
 And blow us up in th' open streets,
 Disguis'd in Rumps, like Sambenites ;
 More like to ruin, and confound, 1575
 Than all the doctrines under ground.

Nor have they chosen Rumps amiss
 For symbols of State-mysteries ;
 Though some suppose 'twas but to shew
 How much they scorn'd the Saints, the few ; 1580
 Who, 'cause they're wasted to the stumps,
 Are represented best by Rumps.
 But Jesuits have deeper reaches
 In all their politick far-fetches,
 And from the Coptick Priest, o Kircherus, 1585
 Found out this mystick way to jcer us.

For, as th' *P* Egyptians us'd by bees
 T' express their antick *PROLOMIES*;
 And by their stings, the swords they wore,
 Held forth authority and power; 1590
 Because these subtil animals
 Bear all their int'rests in their tails,
 And when they're once impar'd in that,
 Are banish'd their well-order'd state;
 They thought all governments were best 1595
 By Hieroglyphick Rumps exprest.
 For, as in bodies natural,
 The rump's the fundament of all;
 So, in a commonwealth, or realm,
 The government is call'd the helm; 1600
 With which, like vessels under sail,
 They're turn'd and winded by the tail;
 The tail, which birds and fishes steer
 Their courses with through sea and air;
 To whom the rudder of the rump is 1605
 The same thing with the stern and compass.
 This shews how perfectly the Rump
 And Commonwealth in nature jump.
 For as a fly, that goes to bed,
 Rests with his tail above his head, 1610
 So in this mungrel state of ours,
 The rabble are the supreme powers;
 That hors'd us on their backs, to show us
 A jadish trick at last, and throw us,
 The learned Rabbins of the Jews 1615
 Write there's a bone, which they call *leuz*,
 I' th' rump of man, of such a virtue,
 No force in nature can do hurt to;
 And therefore at the last great day,
 All th' other members shall, they say. 1620

PART III. CANTO II.

323

Spring out of this, as from a seed
All sorts of vegetals proceed ; . .
From whence the learned sons of art
Os Sacrum justly stile that part.
Then what can better represent
Than this Rump Bone, the Parliament ;
That, after several rude ejections,
And as prodigious resurrections,
With new reversions of nine lives,
Starts up, and like a cat revives ?

1625

1630

But now, alas ! they're all expir'd,
And th' House, as well as Members, fir'd ;
Consum'd in kennels by the rout,
With which they other fires put out :
Condemn'd t' ungoverning distress,
And paultry, private wretchedness ;
Worse than the Devil, to privation,
Beyond all hopes of restoration ;
And parted, like the body and soul,
From all dominion and controul.

1635

1640

We, who cou'd lately with a look
Enact, establish, or revoke ;
Whose arbitrary nods gave law,
And frowns kept multitudes in awe ;
Before the bluster of whose huff,
All hats, as in a storm, flew off ;
Ador'd and bow'd to by the great,
Down to the footman and valet ;
Had more bent knees than chapel-mats,
And prayer than the crowns of hats ;
Shall now be scorn'd as wretchedly ;
For ruin's just as low as high ;
Which might be suffer'd, were it all

1645

1650

The horror that attends our fall :

For some of us have scores more large
Than heads and quarters can discharge ;

1655

And others, who, by restless scraping,
 With publick frauds, and private rapine,
 Have mighty heaps of wealth amass'd,
 Would gladly lay down all at last ; 1660
 And to be but undone, entail
 Their vessels on perpetual jail ;
 And bless the Dev'l to let them farms
 Of forfeit souls on no worse terms.
 This said, a near and louder shout 1665
 Put all th' assembly to the rout,
 Who now begun t' out-run their fear,
 As horses do from whom they bear ;
 But crowded on with so mach haste,
 Until th' had hlock'd the passage fast, 1670
 And barricado'd it with haunches
 Of outward men, and bulks, and paunches,
 That with their shoulders strove to squeeze,
 And rather save a crippled piece
 Of all their crush'd and broken members, 1675
 Than have them grilled on the embers ;
 Still pressing on with heavy packs
 Of one another on their backs :
 The van-guard could no longer bear
 The charges of the forlorn rear, 1680
 But, born down headlong by the rout,
 Were trampled sorely under foot :
 Yet nothing prov'd so formidable
 As the horrid cookery of the rabble ;
 And fear, that keeps all feeling out, 1685
 As lesser pains are by the gout,
 Reliev'd 'em with a fresh supply
 Of rallied force enough to fly,
 And beat a Tuscan running-horse,
 Whose jockey-rider is all spurs. 1690





PART III. CANTO III.

THE ARGUMENT.

The Knight and Squire's prodigious Flight
To quit th' enchanted Bow'r by Night.
He plods to turn his amorous Suit
T' a Plea in Law, and prosecute;
Repairs to Counsel, to advise
'Bout managing the Enterprise;
But first resolves to try by Letter,
And one more fair Address, to get her.

WHO wou'd believe what strange bugbears
Mankind creates itself, of fears
That spring like fern, that insect weed,
Equivocally, without seed;
And have no possible foundation, 5
But merely in th' imagination;
And yet can do more dreadful feats
Than hags, with all their 9 inps and teats;
Make more bewitch and haunt themselves
Than all their nurseries of elves? 10
For fear does things so like a witch,
'Tis hard t' unriddle which is which:
Sets up communities of senses,
To chop and change intelligences;
As Rosicrucian virtuosos 15
Can see with ears, and hear with noses;
And when they neither see nor hear,
Have more than both supply'd by fear;
That makes 'em in the dark see visions,
And hag themselves with apparitions; 20
And when their eyes discover least,
Discern the subtlest objects best:

Do things not contrary, alone,
 To th' course of nature, but its own ;
 The courage of the bravest daunt, 23
 And turn poltroons as valiant :
 For men as resolute appear
 With too much as too little fear ;
 And when they're out of hopes of flying,
 Will run away from death by dying ; 30
 Or turn again to stand it out,
 And those they fled, like lions, rout.

This HUDIBRAS had prov'd too true,
 Who, by the furies left perdue,
 And haunted with detachments, sent 35
 From a Marshal Legion's regiment,
 Was by a fiend, as counterfeit,
 Reliev'd and rescu'd with a cheat ;
 When nothing but himself, and fear,
 Was both the imp, and conjurer ; 40
 As, by the rules o' th' virtuosi,
 It follows in due form of poesie.

Disguis'd in all the masks of night,
 We left our champion on his flight,
 At blindman's buff, to grope his way, 45
 In equal fear of night and day,
 Who took his dark and desp'rate course,
 He knew no better than his horse ;
 And, by an unknown Devil led,
 (He knew as little whither,) fled. 50
 He never was in greater need,
 Nor less capacity, of speed ;
 Disabled, both in man and beast,
 To fly and run away his best ;
 To keep the enemy, and fear, 55
 From equal falling on his rear.

And though with kicks and bangs he ply'd
 The further and the nearer side,
 (As seamen ride with all their force,
 And tug as if they row'd the horse,
 And when the hackney sails most swift,
 Believe they lag, or run a-drift,)
 So, though he posted e'er so fast,
 His fear was greater than his haste :
 For fear, though fleetier than the wind,
 Believes 'tis always left behind.
 But when the morn began t' appear,
 And shift t' another scene his fear,
 He found his new officious shade,
 That came so timely to his aid,
 And forc'd him from the foe t' escape,
 Had turn'd itself to RALPHO's shape ;
 So like in person, garb, and pitch,
 'Twas hard t' interpret which was which.
 For RALPHO had no sooner told
 The Lady all he had t' unfold,
 But she convey'd him out of sight,
 To entertain the approaching Knight ;
 And, while he gave himself diversion,
 T' accommodate his beast and person,
 And put his beard into a posture
 At best advantage to accost her,
 She order'd th' anti-masquerade
 (For his reception) aforesaid :
 But when the ceremony was done,
 The lights put out, and furies gone,
 And HUDIBRAS, among the rest,
 Convey'd away, as RALPHO guess'd,
 The wretched caitiff, all alone,
 (As he believ'd) began to moan,

And tell his story to himself,
 The Knight mistook him for an elf;
 And did so still, till he began
 To scruple at RALPH's Outward Man;
 And thought, because they oft agreed 95
 'T' appear in one another's stead,
 And act the Saint's and Devil's part
 With undistinguishable art,
 They might have done so now, perhaps,
 And put on one another's shapes: 100
 And therefore, to resolve the doubt,
 He star'd upon him, and cry'd out,
 What art? My 'Squire, or that bold Sprite
 That took his place and shape to-night?
 Some busy independent puga 105
 Retainer to his Synagogue?
 Alas! quoth he, I'm none of those,
 Your bosom friends, as you suppose;
 But RALPH himself, your trusty 'Squire,
 Wh' has dragg'd your Dunship out o' th' mire, 110
 And from th' enchantments of a widow,
 Wh' had turn'd you int' a beast, have freed you;
 And, though a prisoner of war,
 Have brought you safe where you now are;
 Which you would gratefully repay 115
 Your constant Presbyterian way.
 That's stranger (quoth the Knight) and stranger.
 Who gave thee notice of my danger?
 Quoth he, Th' infernal Conjuror
 Pursu'd and took me prisoner; 120
 And knowing you were hereabout,
 Brought me along to find you out;
 Where I, in lugger-mugger hid,
 Have noted all they said or did;

PART-III. CANTO III.

And though they lay to him the pageant,
I did not see him, nor his agent ;
Who play'd their sorceries out of sight,
T' avoid a fiercer second fight.
But didst thou see no Devils then?
Not one (quoth he) but carnal men,
A little worse than fiends in hell,
And that She-Devil Jezebel,
That laugh'd and tee-he'd with derision,
To see them take your deposition.

What then (quoth HUDIBRAS) was he
That play'd the Dev'l to examine me?
A rallying weaver in the town,
That did it in a parson's gown ;
Whom all the parish take for gifted ;
But, for my part, I ne'er believ'd it :
In which you told them all your feats,
Your conscientious frauds and cheats ;
Deny'd your whipping, and contest
The naked truth of all the rest,
More plainly than the t Rev'rend Writer,
That to our Churches veil'd his Mitre ;
All which they took in black and white,
And cudgell'd me to under-write.

What made thee, when they all were gone,
And none but thou and I alone,
To act the Devil, and forbear
To rid me of my hellish fear ?

Quoth he, I knew your constant rate
And frame of sp'rit too obstinate
To be by me prevail'd upon
With any motives of my own ;
And therefore strove to counterfeit
The Dev'l a-while, to nick your wit ;

The Devil, that is your constant crony,
 That only can prevail upon ye ; 160
 Else we might still have been disputing,
 And they with weighty drubs confuting.

The Knight, who now began to find
 Th' had left the enemy behind,
 And saw no farther harm remain, 165
 But feeble weariness and pain ;
 Perceiv'd, by losing of their way,
 Th' had gain'd th' advantage of the day ;
 And, by declining of the road,
 They had, by chance, their rear made good ; 170
 He ventur'd to dismiss his fear,
 That parting's wont to rent and tear,
 And give the desperat'st attack
 To danger still behind its back.

For having paus'd to recollect, 175
 And on his past success reflect,

I' examine and consider why,
 And whence, and how, they came to fly,
 And when no Devil had appear'd,
 What else, it cou'd be said, he fear'd ; 180
 It put him in so fierce a rage,

He once resolv'd to re-engage ;
 Toss'd like a foot-ball back again,
 With shame and vengeance, and disdain.
 Quoth he, it was thy cowardise 185

That made me from this loaguer rise ;
 And when I'd half reduc'd the place,
 To quit it infamously base ;

Was better cover'd by the new
 Arriv'd detachment then I knew ; 190
 To slight my new acquests, and run
 Victoriously from battles won ;

PART III. CANTO III.

331

And reck'ning all I gain'd or lost,
 'To sell them cheaper than they cost ;
 To make me put myself to flight, 193
 And conqu'ring run away by night ;
 To drag me out, which th' haughty foe
 Durst never have presum'd to do ;
 To mount me in the dark, by force,
 Upon the bare ridge of my horse ; 200
 Expos'd in *querpo* to their rage,
 Without my arms and equipage ;
 Lest, if they ventur'd to pursue,
 I might th' unequal fight renew ;
 And, to preserve thy Outward Man, 205
 Assum'd my place, and led the van.

All this, quoth RALPH, I did, 'tis true,
 Not to preserve myself, but you ;
 You, who were damn'd to baser drubs
 Than wretches feel in powd'ring tubs. 210
 To mount two-wheel'd carroches, worse
 Than managing a wooden-horse :
 Dragg'd out through straiter holes by th' ears,
 Eras'd or coup'd for perjurers ;
 Who, though th' attempt had prov'd in vain, 215
 Had had no reason to complain :
 But siuce it prosper'd, 'tis unhandsome
 To blame the hand that paid your ransome,
 And rescu'd your obnoxious bones
 From unavoidable battoons. 220
 The enemy was reinforc'd,
 And we disabled, and unhors'd,
 Disarm'd, unqualify'd for fight,
 And no way left but hasty flight,
 Which, though as desp'rate in th' attempt,
 Has giv'n you freedom to condemn't. 225

But were our bones in fit condition
 To reinforce the expedition,
 'Tis now unseasonable, and vain,
 To think of falling on again. 230
 No martial project to surprize
 Can ever be attempted twice ;
 Nor cast design serve afterwards,
 As gamesters tear their losing-cards,
 Beside, our bangs of man and beast 235
 Are fit for nothing now but rest ;
 And for a-while will not be able
 To rally, and prove serviceable ;
 And therefore I, with reason, chose
 This stratagem t' amuse our foes ; 240
 To make an honourable retreat,
 And wave a total sure defeat ;
 For those that fly may fight again,
 Which he can never do that's slain.
 Hence timely running's no mean part 245
 Of conduct in the martial art ;
 By which some glorious feats atchieve,
 As citizens by breaking thrive ;
 And cannons conquer armies, while
 They seem to draw off and recoil ; 250
 Is held the gallantest course, and bravest
 To great exploits, as well as safest ;
 That spares th' expence of time and pains,
 And dangerous beating out of brains ;
 And in the end prevails as certain 255
 As those that never trust to fortune ;
 But make their fear do execution
 Beyond the stoutest resolution ;
 As earthquakes kill without a blow,
 And, only trembling, overthrow. 260

PART III. CANTO III.

333

If 'th' ancients crown'd their bravest men
 That only sav'd a citizen,
 What victory could e'er be won,
 If ev'ry one would save but one ?
 Or fight indanger'd to be lost, 265
 Where all resolve to save the most ?
 By this means, when a battle's won,
 The war's as far from being done ;
 For those that save themselves, and fly,
 Go halves, at least, i' th' victory ; 270
 And sometimes, when the loss is small,
 And danger great, they challenge all ;
 Print new additions to their feats,
 And emendations in Gazettes ;
 And when, for furious haste to run, 275
 They durst not stay to fire a gun,
 Have done't with bonfires, and at home
 Made squibs and crackers overcome ;
 To set the rabble on a flame,
 And keep their governors from blame ; 280
 Disperse the news the pulpit tells,
 Confirm'd with fire-works and with bells ;
 And though reduc'd to that extrem,
 They have been forc'd to sing Te Deum ;
 Yet, with religious blasphemy, 285
 By flattering Heaven with a lie ,
 And for their beating giving thanks,
 Th' have rais'd recruits, and fill'd their banks ;
 For those who run from th' enemy,
 Engage them equally to fly ; 290
 And when the fight becomes a chace,
 Those win the day that win the race ;
 And that which would not pass in fights,
Has done the feat with easy flights ;

But were our bones in fit condition
To reinforce the expedition,
'Tis now unseasonable, and vain,
To think of falling on again.
No martial project to surprize
Can ever be attempted twice ;
Nor cast design serve afterwards,
As gamesters tear their losing-cards,
Beside, our bangs of man and beast
Are fit for nothing now but rest ;
And for a-while will not be able
To rally, and prove serviceable ;
And therefore I, with reason, chose
This stratagem t' amuse our foes ;
To make an honourable retreat,
And wave a total sure defeat ;
For those that fly may fight again,
Which he can never do that's slain.
Hence timely running's no mean part
Of conduct in the martial art ;
By which some glorious feats atchieve,
As citizens by breaking thrive ;
And cannons conquer armies, while
They seem to draw off and recoil ;
Is held the gallantest course, and bravest
To great exploits, as well as safest ;
That spares th' expence of time and pains,
And dangerous beating out of brains ;
And in the end prevails as certain
As those that never trust to fortune ;
But make their fear do execution
Beyond the stoutest resolution ;
As earthquakes kill without a blow,
And, only trembling, overthrow.

PART III. CANTO III. 335

re's now no fear of wounds, nor maiming ;
 dangers are reduc'd to famine ; 330
 I feats of arms, to plot, design,
 prize, and stratagem, and mine ;
 have no need nor use of courage,
 ess it be for glory or forage :
 if they fight, 'tis but by chance, 335
 on one side vent'ring to advance,
 I come uncivilly too near,
 charg'd unmercifully i' th' rear ;
 I forc'd with terrible resistance,
 keep hercafter at a distance ; 340
 pick out ground to incamp upon,
 ere store of largest rivers run,
 t serve, instead of peaceful barriers,
 part th' engagements of their warriors ;
 ere both from side to side may skip, 345
 I only encounter at ho-peep :
 men are found the stouter-hearted,
 certainer th' are to be parted,
 I therefore post themselves in bogs,
 th' ancient mice attack'd the frogs, 350
 I made their mortal enemy,
 water-rat, their strict ally.
 'tis not now, who's stout and bold,
 who bears hunger best, and cold ;
 I he's approv'd the most deserving, 355
 o longest can hold out at starving ;
 I he that routs most pigs and cows,
 formidablest man of prowess.
 h' emperor CALIGULA,
 t triumph'd o'er the British Sea, 360
 k crabs and oysters prisoners,
 sters, 'stead of cuirasiers,

The law, that settles all^r you do,
And marries where you did but woo;
That makes the most perfidious lover
A lady, that's as false, recover;
And if it judge upon your side,
Will soon extend her for your bride;
And put her person, goods, or lands,
Or which you like best int' your hands.

For law's the wisdom of all ages,
And manag'd by the ablest sages;
Who, though their bus'ness at the bar
Be but a kind of civil war,
In which th' engage with fiercer dudgeons
Than e'er the GRECIANS did and TROJANS,
They never manage the contest
T'^r impair their public interest;
Or by their controversies lessen
The dignity of their profession:
Not like us Brethren, who divide
Our Commonwealth, the Cause, and Side;
And though w' are all as near of kindred
As th' outward man is to the inward,
We agree in nothing, but to wrangle
About the slightest fingle-fangle;
While lawyers have more sober sense
Than t' argue at their own expence,
But make their best advantages
Of others' quarrels, like the SWISS;
And out of foreign controversies,
By aiding both sides, fill their purses;
But have no int'rest in the cause
For which th' engage, and wage the laws;
Nor further prospect than their pay,
Whether they lose or win the day:

PART III. CANTO III.

339

And though th' abounded in all ages,
 With sundry³ learned clerks and sages,
 Though all their business be dispute,
 Which way they canvass ev'ry suit,
 Th' have no disputes about their art,
 Nor in Polemicks controvert :
 While all professions else are found
 With nothing but disputes t' abound :
 Divines of all sorts, and physicians,
 Philosophers, mathematicians :
 The Galenist and Paracelsian
 Condemn the way each other deals in :
 Anatomists dissect and mangle,
 To cut themselves out work to wrangle :
 Astrologers dispute their dreams,
 That in their sleeps they talk of schemes :
 And heralds stickle, who got who
 So many hundred years ago.

465

470

475

480

But lawyers are too wise a nation
 T' expose their trade to disputation ;
 Or make the busy rabble judges
 Of all their secret piques and grudges ;
 In which whoever wins the day,
 The whole profession's sure to pay.
 Beside, no mountebanks, nor cheats,
 Dare undertake to do their feats ;
 When in all other sciences
 They swarm, like insects, and increase.

485

490

For what bigot durst ever draw,
 By inward light, a deed in law ?
 Or could hold forth, by revelation,
 An answer to a declaration ?
 For those that meddle with their tools
 Will cut their fingers, if they're fools :

495

And if you follow their advice,
 In bills, and answers, and replies,
 They'll write a love-letter in chancery,
 Shall bring her upon oath to answer ye,
 And soon reduce her to b' your wife,
 Or make her weary of her life.

The Knight, who us'd with tricks and shifts
 To edify by RALPHO's Gifts,
 But in appearance cry'd him down,
 To make them better seem his own,
 (All Plagiaries' constant course
 Of sinking when they take a purse),
 Resolv'd to follow his advice,
 But kept it from him by disguise;
 And, after stubborn contradiction,
 To counterfeit his own conviction,
 And by transition fall upon
 The resolution as his own.

Quoth he, This gambol thou advisest
 Is of all others the unwisest;
 For if I think by law to gain her,
 'There's nothing sillier or vainer.
 'Tis but to hazard my pretence,
 Where nothing's certain, but th' expence;
 To act against myself, and traverse
 My suit and title to her favours;
 And if she shou'd (which Heav'n forbid)
 O'erthrow me, as the fidler did,
 What aftercourse have I to take,
 'Gainst losing all I have at stake?
 He that with injury is griev'd,
 And goes to law to be reliev'd,
 Is sillier than a sottish chowse,
 Who, when a thief has robb'd his house,

PART III. CANTO III.

341

Applies himself to cunning men,
 To help him to his goods agen;
 When all he can expect to gain,
 535 Is but to squander more in vain;
 And yet I have no other way
 But is as difficult to play.
 For to reduce her by main force,
 Is now in vain; by fair means, worse;
 540 But worst of all, to give her over,
 Till she's as desp'rate to recover:
 For bad games are thrown up too soon,
 Until th' are never to be won.
 But since I have no other course,
 545 But is as bad t' attempt, or worse,
 He that complies against his will,
 Is of his own opinion still;
 Which he may adhere to, yet disown,
 For reasons to himself best known:
 550 But 'tis not to b^e avoided slow,
 For SINDROPHIEL resolves to sue;
 Whom I must answer, or begin
 Inevitably first with him.
 For I've receiv'd advertisement,
 555 By times enough, of his intent;
 And knowing he that first complains
 Th' advantage of the business gains;
 For Courts of Justice understand
 The plaintiff to be eldest hand;
 560 Who what he pleases may aver;
 The other, nothing, till he swear;
 Is freely admitted to all grace,
 And lawful favour, by his place;
 And for his bringing custom in,
 565 Has all advantages to win.

I, who resolve to oversee
 No lucky opportunity,
 Will go to council, to advise
 Which way t' encounter, or surprize,
 And, after long consideration,
 Have found out one to fit th' occasion ;
 Most apt for what I have to do,
 As counsellor and justice too.
 And truly so, no doubt, he was,
 A lawyer fit for such a case.

An *z* old dull sot, who told the clock
 For many years at Bridewell-dock,
 At Westminster, and Hicks's-Hall,
 And *Hiccius Doctius* play'd in all ;
 Where, in all governments and times,
 H' had been both friend and foe to grimes,
 And us'd two equal ways of gaining,
 By hind'ring justice or maintaining ;
 To many a whore gave priviledge,
 And whipp'd for want of quarteridge :
 Cart-loads of bawds to prison sent
 For b'ing behind a fortnight's rent ;
 And many a trusty pimp and croney
 To a Puddle-dock for want of money ;
 Engag'd the constable to seize
 All those that would not break the peace,
 Nor give him back his own foul words,
 Though sometimes Commoners or Lords,
 And kept 'em prisoners of course,
 For being sober at ill hours,
 That in the morning he might free
 Or bind 'em over for his fee ;
Made b monsters fine, and puppet-plays,
 For leave to practise in their ways ;

PART III. CANTO III.

543

Farm'd out all cheats, and went a share
With th' headborough and scavenger ;
And made the dirt i' th' streets compound
For taking up the publick ground ;

603

The kennel, and the King's highway,
For being unmolested, pay ;
Let out the stocks, and whipping-post,
And cage, to those that gave him most ;
Impos'd a tax on bakers' ears,

610

And for false weights on chandelers ;
Made victuallers and vintness fine
For arbitrary ale and wine ;

But was a kind and constant friend
To all that regularly offend ;

615

As residentiary bawds,
And brokers that receive stol'n goods ;

That cheat in lawful mysteries,
And pay church duties and his fees ;

But was implacable, and awkward,
To all that interlop'd and hawker'd.

620

To this brave man the Knight repairs
For council in his law-affairs ;

And found him mounted in his pew,
With books and money plac'd for shew,

625

Like nest-eggs to make clients lay,
And for his false opinion pay ;

To whom the Knight, with comely grace,
Put off his hat to put his case ;

Which he as proudly entertain'd
As th' other courteously strain'd ;

630

And, to assure him, 'twas not that
He look'd for, bid him put on's hat.

Quoth he, There is one SINDROPHIEL,
Whom I have cudgell'd—Very well.

And now he brags t' have beaten me.—
 Better and better still, quoth he.—
 And vows to stick me to a wall
 Where-e'er he meets me—Best of all.
 'Tis true, the knave has taken's oath
 That I robb'd him—Well done, in troth
 When h' has confess'd he stole my cloak,
 And pick'd my fob, and what he took ;
 Which was the cause that made me bang him,
 And take my goods again — Marry hang him.
 Now whether I should before-hand,
 Swear he robb'd me ?—I understand.
 Or bring my action of conversion
 And trover for my goods ?—Ah, Whoreson !
 Or if 'tis better to indite,
 And bring him to his trial ?—Right.
 Prevent what he designs to do,
 And swear for th' State against him ?—True.
 Or whether he that is defendant
 In this case has the better end on't ;
 Who, putting in a new cross-bill,
 May traverse th' action ?—Better still.
 Then there's a Lady too—Aye, marry !
 That's easily prov'd accessory ;
 A widow, who, by solemn vows
 Contracted to me for my spouse,
 Combin'd with him to break her word,
 And has abetted all.—Good Lord !
 Suborn'd th' aforesaid SIDROPHIEL
 To tamper with the Dev'l of Hell ;
 Who put m' into a horrid fear,
 Fear of my life.—Make that appear.
 Made an assault with fiends and men
 Upon my body.—Good agen,

PART III. CANTO III.

345

And kept me in a deadly fright,
And false imprisonment, all night :
Mean while they robb'd me, and my horse,
And stole my saddle.—Worse and worse.
And made me mount upon the bare ridge,
T' avoid a wretcheder miscarriage.

670

Sir, quoth the Lawyer, not to flatter ye,

675

You have as good and fair a battery
As heart can wish, and need not shame
The proudest man alive to claim.

For if th' have us'd you as you say ;

Marry, quoth I, God give you joy.

680

I wou'd it were my case, I'd give
More than I'll say, or you'll believe.

I would so trounce her, and her purse ;
I'd make her kneel for better or worse ;

For matrimony and hanging here

685

Both go by destiny so clear,

That you as sure may pick and choose,

As Cross, I win ; and, Pile, you lose ;

And, if I durst, I would advance

As much in ready maintenance,

690

As upon any case I've known,

But we that practise dare not own.

The law severely contrabands

Our taking bus'ness off men's hands ;

'Tis common barratry, that bears

695

Point-blank an action 'gainst our ears,

And crops them till there is not leather

To stick a pin in left of either ;

For which some do the Summer-fault,

And o'er the bar, like tumblers, vault.

700

But you may swear, at any rate,

Things not in nature, for the State :

For in all courts of justice here
 A witness is not said to swear,
 But make oath ; that is, in plain terms, 705
 To forge whatever he affirms.

(I thank you, quoth the Knight, for that,
 Because 'tis to my purpose pat—)
 For Justice, though she's painted blind,
 Is to the weaker side inclin'd, 710
 Like Charity ; else right and wrong
 Could never hold it out so long,
 And, like blind Fortune, with a slight
 Convey mens' interest and right
 From c Stiles's pocket into Nokes's, 715
 As easily as *Hocus Pocus* ;
 Play fast and loose ; make men obnoxious,
 And clear again, like *Hiccius Doctius*.
 Then whether you wou'd take her life,
 Or but recover her for your wife, 720
 Or be content with what she has,
 And let all other matters pass,
 The bus'ness to the law's alone,
 The proof is all it looks upon :
 And you can want no witnesses 725
 To swear to any thing you please,
 That hardly get their mere expences
 By th' labour of their consciences ;
 Or letting out to hire their ears
 To affidavit customers, 730
 At inconsiderable values,
 To serve for jury-men or tallies,
 Although retain'd in th' hardest matters,
 Of trustees and administrators.

For that, quoth he, let me alone ; 735
 W' have store of such, and all our own ;

Bred up and tutor'd by our teachers,
The ablest of conscience-stretchers.

That's well, quoth he ; but I should guess,
By weighing all advantages, 740
Your surest way is first to pitch
On d BONGEY for a water-witch ;
And when y' have hang'd the conjurer,
Y' have time enough to deal with her.
In th' intr'im, spare for no trepans 745
To draw her neck into the bans :
Ply her with love-letters and billets,
And bait 'em well, for quirks and quillets
With trains t' inveigle, and surprize,
Her heedless answers and replies ; 750
And if she miss the mouse-trap lines,
They'll serve for other by-designs ;
And make an artist understand
To copy out her seal or hand ;
Or find void places in the paper 755
To steal in something to intrap her ;
Till, with her worldly goods and body,
Spight of her heart, she has endow'd ye,
Retain all sorts of witnesses,
That ply i' th' Temple under trees ; 760
Or walk the round, with knights o' th' posts,
About the cross-legg'd knights, their hosts ;
Or wait for customers between
The pillars-rows in Lincoln's-Inn ;
Where vouchers, forgers, common-bail, 765
And affidavit-men, ne'er fail
T' expose to sale all sorts of oaths,
According to their ears and cloaths,
Their only necessary tools,
Besides the Gospel and their souls : 770

For in all courts of justice here
 A witness is not said to swear,
 But make oath ; that is, in plain terms, 705
 To forge whatever he affirms.

(I thank you, quoth the Knight, for that,
 Because 'tis to my purpose pat—)
 For Justice, though she's painted blind,
 Is to the weaker side inclin'd, 710

Like Charity ; else right and wrong
 Could never hold it out so long,
 And, like blind Fortune, with a slight
 Convey mens' interest and right
 From c Stiles's pocket into Nokes's, 715
 As easily as *Hocus Pocus* ;

Play fast and loose ; make men obnoxious,
 And clear again, like *Hiccius Doctius*.
 Then whether you wou'd take her life,
 Or but recover her for your wife, 720

Or be content with what she has,
 And let all other matters pass,
 The bus'ness to the law's alone,
 The proof is all it looks upon :

And you can want no witnesses 725
 To swear to any thing you please,
 That hardly get their mere expences
 By th' labour of their consciences ;

Or letting out to hire their ears
 To affidavit customers, 730
 At inconsiderable values,

To serve for jury-men or tallies,
 Although retain'd in th' hardest matters,
 Of trustees and administrators.

For that, quoth he, let me alone ; 735
 W' have store of such, and all our own ;



PART III. CANTO III.

347

Bred up and tutor'd by our teachers,
The ablest of conscience-stretchers.

That's well, quoth he ; but I should guess,

By weighing all advantages, 740

Your surest way is first to pitch

On d BONGEY for a water-witch ;

And when y' have hang'd the conjurer,

Y' have time enough to deal with her.

In th' intr'im, spare for no trepans 745

To draw her neck into the bans :

Ply her with love-letters and billets,

And bait 'em well, for quirks and quillets

With trains t' inveigle, and surprize,

Her heedless answers and replies ; 750

And if she miss the mouse-trap lines,

They'll serve for other by-designs ;

And make an artist understand

To copy out her seal or hand ;

Or find void places in the paper 755

To steal in something to intrap her ;

Till, with her worldly goods and body,

Spight of her heart, she has endow'd ye,

Retain all sorts of witnesses,

That ply i' th' Temple under trees ; 760

Or walk the round, with knights o' th' posts,

About the cross-legg'd knights, their hosts ;

Or wait for customers between

The pillars-rows in Lincoln's-Inn ;

Where vouchers, forgers, common-bail, 765

And affidavit-men, ne'er fail

T' expose to sale all sorts of oaths,

According to their ears and cloaths,

Their only necessary tools,

Besides the Gospel and their souls : 770

And when y' are furnish'd with all purveys,
I shall be ready at your service.

I would not give, quoth HUDIBRAS,
A straw to understand a case,
Without the admirable skill
To wind and manage it at will ;

775

To vere, and tack, and steer a cause
Against the weather-gage of laws ;
And ring the changes upon cases
As plain as noses upon faces,

780

As you have well instructed me,
For which you've earn'd (here 'tis) your fee.
I long to practise your advice,

785

And try the subtle artifice ;
To bait a letter, as you bid ;
As not long after, thus he did :
For having pump'd up all his wit,
And hamm'd upon it, thus he writ.







AN HEROICAL EPISTLE OF
HUDIBRAS TO HIS LADY.

I WHO was once as great as CESAR,
Am now reduc'd to NEBUCHADNEZZAR ;
And from as fam'd a conqueror
As ever took degree in war,
Or did his exercise in battle, 5
By you turn'd out to grass with cattle :
For since I am deny'd access
To all my earthly happiness :
Am fallen from the paradise
Of your good graces, and fair eyes ; 10
Lost to the world, and you, I'm sent
To everlasting banishment ;
Where all the hopes I had t' have won
Your heart, b'ing dash'd, will break my own
Yet if you were not so severe 15
To pass your doom before you hear,
You'd find, upon my just defence,
How much y' have wrong'd my innocence.
That once I made a vow to you,
Which yet is unperform'd, 'tis true : 20
But not because it is unpaid,
'Tis violated, though delay'd ;
Or, if it were, it is no fau't,
So heinous as you'd have it thought ;
To undergo the loss of ears, 25
Like vulgar hackney perjurers :
For there's a diff'rence in the case,
Between the noble and the base,
Who always are observ'd t' have done't
Upon as different an account :

350 AN HEROICAL EPISTLE OF

The one for great and weighty cause,
 To salve in honour ugly flaws ;
 For none are like to do it sooner
 Than those who are nicest of their honour :
 The other, for base gain and pay, 35
 Forswear, and perjure by the day ;
 And make th' exposing and retailing
 Their souls and consciences a calling.

It is no scandal, nor aspersion,
 Upon a great and noble person, 40
 To say he nat'rally abhorr'd
 Th' old-fashion'd trick, To keep his word ;
 Though 'tis perfidiousness and shame
 In meaner men to do the same :

For to be able to forget, 45
 Is found more useful to the great,
 Than gout, or deafness, or bad eyes,
 To make 'em pass for wond'rous wise.

But though the law on perjurers
 Inflicts the forfeiture of ears, 50
 It is not just that does exempt

The guilty, and punish th' innocent ;
 To make the ears repair the wrong
 Committed by th' ungovern'd tongue ;
 And when one member is forsworn, 55

Another to be cropt or torn.
 And if you shou'd, as you design,
 By course of law, recover mine,
 You're like, if you consider right,
 To gain but little honour by't. 60

For he that for his lady's sake
 Lays down his life or limbs at stake,
 Does not so much deserve her favour,
 As he that pawns his soul to have her.

HUDIBRAS TO HIS LADY. 351

This y' have acknowledg'd I have done, 65
 Although you now disdain to own ;
 But sentence what you rather ought
 T' esteem good service than a fau't.
 Besides, oaths are no: bound to bear
 That literal sense the words infer, 70
 But, by the practice of the age,
 Are to be judg'd how far th' engage ;
 And, where the sense by custom's checkt,
 Are found void, and of none effect.
 For no man takes or keeps a vow 75
 But just as he sees others do ;
 Nor are th' oblig'd to be so brittle,
 As not to yield and bow a little :
 For as best-temper'd blades are found,
 Before they break, to bend quite round, 80
 So truest oaths are still most tough,
 And though they bow, are breaking proof:
 Then wherefore should they not b' allow'd
 In love a greater latitude?
 For as the law of arms approves 85
 All ways to conquest, so should love's ;
 And not be ty'd to true or false,
 But make that justest that prevails :
 For how can that which is above
 All empire, high and mighty love, 90
 Submit its great prerogative
 To any other power alive ?
 Shall love, that to no crown gives place,
 Become the subject of a case ?
 The fundamental law of nature, 95
 Be over-rul'd by those made after ?
 Commit the censure of its cause
 To any but its own great laws ?

352 AN HEROICAL EPISTLE OF

Love, that's the world's preservative,
 That keeps all souls of things alive ;
 Controuls the mighty pow'r of fate,
 And gives mankind a longer date ;
 The life of nature, that restores
 As fast as time and death devours ;
 To whose free-gift the world does owe,
 Not only earth, but heaven too ;
 For love's the only trade that's driven,
 The interest of state in heav'n,
 Which nothing but the soul of man
 Is capable to entertain.
 For what can earth produce, but love
 To represent the joys above ?
 Or who but lovers can converse,
 Like angels, by a the eye-discourse ?
 Address and compliment by vision ;
 Make love and court by intuition ?
 And burn in amorous flames as fierce
 As those celestial ministers ?
 Then how can any thing offend,
 In order to so great an end ?
 Or heav'n itself a sin f resent,
 That for its own supply was meant ?
 That merits, in a kind mistake,
 A pardon for th' offence's sake.
 Or if it did not, but the cause
 Were left to th' injury of laws,
 What tyranny can disapprove
 There should be equity in love ;
 For laws that are inanimate,
 And feel no sense of love or hate,
 That have no passion of their own,
 No pity to be wrought upon.



HUDIBRAS TO HIS LADY.

353

Are only proper to inflict
Revenge on criminals as strict :
But to have power to forgive, 135
Is empire and prerogative ;
And 'tis in crowns a nobler gem
To grant a pardon than condemn:
Then since so few do what they ought,
'Tis great t' indulge a well-meant fault. 140
For why should he who made address,
All humble ways, without success,
And met with nothing, in return,
But insolence, affronts, and scorn,
Not strive by wit to countermine, 145
And bravely carry his design ?
He who was us'd so unlike a soldier,
Blown up with philters of love-powder ?
And after letting blood, and purging,
Condemn'd to voluntary scourging ; 150
Alarm'd with many a horrid fright,
And claw'd by goblins in the night ;
Insulted on, revil'd, and jeer'd,
With rude invasion of his beard ;
And when your sex was foully scandal'd, 155
As foully by the rabble handled ;
Attack'd by despicable foes,
And drub'd with mean and vulgar blows ;
And, after all, to be debarr'd
So much as standing on his guard ; 160
When horses, being spurr'd and prick'd,
Have leave to kick for being kick'd ?
Or why should you, whose mother-wits
Are furnish'd with all perquisites,
That with your breeding-teeth begin, 165
And nursing babies, that lie in,

354 AN HEROICAL EPISTLE OF

B' allow'd to put all tricks upon
 Our cully sex, and we use none ?
 We, who have nothing but frail vows
 Against your stratagems t' oppose ;
 Or oaths more feeble than your own,
 By which we are no less put down ?
 You wound, like ε Parthians, while you fly,
 And kill with a retreating eye :
 Retire the more, the more we press,
 To draw us into ambushes.
 As pirates all false colours wear
 T' intrap th' unwary mariner,
 So women, to surprise us, spread
 The borrow'd flags of white and red ;
 Display 'em thicker on their cheeks
 Than their old grandmothers, the Picts ;
 And raise more devils with their looks,
 Than conjurer's less subtle books ;
 Lay trains of amorous intrigues,
 In tow'rs, and curls, and perriwigs,
 With greater art and cunning rear'd,
 Than h PHILIP NYE's thanksgiving beard,
 Prepost'rously t' entice, and gain
 Those to adore 'em they disdain ;
 And only draw 'em in, to clog
 With idle names a catalogue.
 A lover is, the more he's brave,
 T' his mistress but the more a slave ;
 And whatsoever she commands,
 Becomes a favour from her hands ;
 Which he's obliged t' obey, and must,
 Whether it be unjust or just.
 Then when he is compell'd by her
 T' adventures he would else forbear,

HUDIBRAS TO HIS LADY.

Who with his honour can withstand,
Since force is greater than command ?
And when necessity's obey'd,
Nothing can be unjust or bad ;
And therefore when the mighty pow'rs
Of love, our great ally and yours,
Join'd forces not to be withstood
By frail enamour'd flesh and blood,
All I have done, unjust or ill,
Was in obedience to your will ;
And all the blame that can be due,
Falls to your cruelty and you.
Nor are those scandals I confess,
Against my will and interest,
More than is daily done of course
By all men, when they're under force ;
When some upon the rack confess
What th' hangman and their prompters please ;
But are no sooner out of pain,
Than they deny it all again.
• But when the Devil turns confessor,
Truth is a crime he takes no pleasure
To hear, or pardon, like the founder
Of liars, whom they all claim under ;
And therefore, when I told him none,
I think it was the wiser done.
Nor am I without precedent,
The first that on th' adventure went :
All mankind ever did of course,
And daily does the same, or worse.
For what romance can show a lover,
That had a lady to recover,
And did not steer a nearer course,
To fall a-board on his amours ?

And what at first was held a crime,
Has turn'd to honourable in time.

To what a height did ⁱ infant ROME,
By ravishing of women, come !
When men upon their spouses seiz'd,
And freely marry'd where they pleas'd,
They ne'er forswore themselves, nor ly'd,
Nor, in the mind they were in, dy'd ;
Nor took the pains t' address and sue,
Nor play'd the masquerade to woo :
Disdain'd to stay for friends' consents ;
Nor juggled about settlements :
Did need no license, nor no priest,
Nor friends, nor kindred, to assist ;
Nor lawyers, to join land and money
In th' holy state of matrimony,
Before they settled hands and hearts,
Till ^k alimony or death them parts :
Nor wou'd endure to stay until
Th' had got the very bride's good will ;
But took a wise and shorter course
To win the ladies, downright force.
And justly made 'em prisoners then,
As they have often since, us men,
With acting plays, and dancing jigs,
The luckiest of all love's intrigues ;
And when they had them at their pleasure,
Then talk'd of love and flames at leisure ;
For after matrimony's over,
He that holds out but half a lover,
Deserves for ev'ry minute more
Than half a year of love before ;
For which the dames in contemplation
Of that best way of application,



HUDIBRAS TO HIS LADY.

357

Prov'd nobler wives than e'er was known,
By suit or treaty to be won;
And such as all posterity
Cou'd never equal nor come nigh.

270

For women first were made for men,
Not men for them.—It follows, then,
That men have right to ev'ry one,
And they no freedom of their own ;
And therefore men have pow'r to chuse,
But they no charter to refuse.

275

Hence 'tis apparent, that what course
Soe'er we take to your amours,

280

Though by the indirectest way,
'Tis no injustice, nor foul play ;
And that you ought to take that course,
As we take you, for better or worse ;
And gratefully submit to those
Who you, before another, chose.

285

For why should ev'ry savage beast
Exceed his great lord's interest ?
Have freer pow'r than he in grace,
And nature, o'er the creature has ?

290

Because the laws he since has made
Have cut off all the pow'r he had ;
Retrench'd the absolute dominion
That nature gave him over women ;
When all his pow'r will not extend
One law of nature to suspend ;

295

And but to offer to repeal
The smallest clause, is to rebel.
This, if men rightly understood
Their privilege, they wou'd make good ;
And not, like sots, permit their wives
To encroach on their prerogatives ;

300

For which sin they deserve to be
Kept, as they are, in slavery :
And this some precious Gifted Teachers,
Unrev'rently reputed leachers,
And disobey'd in making love,
Have vow'd to all the world to prove,
And make ye suffer, as you ought,
For that uncharitable fau't.

But I forget myself, and rove
Beyond th' instructions of my love.

Forgive me (Fair) and only blame
Th' extravagancy of my flame,
Since 'tis too much at once to show
Excess of love and temper too.
All I have said that's bad and true,
Was never meant to aim at you,
Who have so sov'reign a controul
O'er that poor slave of yours, my soul,
That, rather than to forfeit you,
Has ventur'd loss of heaven too :
Both with an equal pow'r possest,
To render all that serve you blest :
But none like him, who's destin'd either
To have, or lose you, both together.
And if you'll but this fault release
(For so it must be, since you please)
I'll pay down all that vow, and more,
Which you commanded, and I swore,
And expiate upon my skin
Th' arrears in full of all my sin.
For 'tis but just that I should pay
Th' accruing penance for delay,
Which shall be done, until it move
Your equal pity and your love.

HUDIBRAS TO HIS LADY.

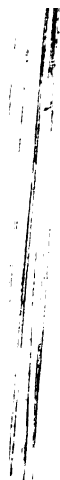
359

The Knight, perusing this Epistle,
 Believ'd h' had brought her to his whistle ;
 And read it like a jocund lover,
 With great applause t' himself, twice over ; 340
 Subscrib'd his name, but at a fit
 And humble distance to his wit ;
 And dated it with wond'rous art,
 Giv'n from the bottom of his heart ;
 Then seal'd it with his Coat of Love, 345
 A smoaking faggot—and above,
 Upon a scroll—I burn, and weep ;
 And near it—For her Ladyship ;
 Of all her sex most excellent,
 These to her gentle hands present. 350
 Then gave it to his faithful Squire,
 With lessons how t' observe and eye her.
 She first consider'd which was better,
 To send it back, or burn the letter.
 But guessing that it might import, 355
 Though nothing else, at least her sport,
 She open'd it, and read it out,
 With many a smile and leering flout :
 Resolv'd to answer it in kind,
 And thus perform'd what she design'd. 360

THE LADY'S ANSWER
TO THE KNIGHT.

THAT you're a beast, and turn'd to grass,
 Is no strange news, nor ever was ;
 At least to me, who once, you know,
 Did from the pound replevin you,
 When both your sword and spurs were won 5
 In combat by an Amazon.
 That sword, that did (like Fate) determine
 Th' inevitable death of vermine,
 And never denit its furious blows,
 But cut the throats of pigs and cows, 10
 By TRULLA was, in single fight,
 Disarm'd and wrested from its Knight ;
 Your heels degraded of your spurs,
 And in the stocks close prisoners ;
 Where still they'd lain, in base restraint, 15
 If I, in pity of your complaint,
 Had not, on honourable conditions,
 Relcast 'em from the worst of prisons ;
 And what return that favour met
 You cannot (though you wou'd) forget ; 20
 When, being free, you strove t' evade
 The oaths you had in prison made ;
 Forswore yourself ; and first deny'd it,
 But after own'd and justify'd it ;
 And when y' had falsely broke one vow, 25
 Absolv'd yourself by breaking two.
 For while you sneakingly submit,
 And beg for pardon at our feet,





TO THE KNIGHT.

361

Discourag'd by your guilty fears,
 To hope for quarter for your ears, 30
 And doubting 'twas in vain to sue,
 You claim us boldly as your due ;
 Declare that treachery and force,
 To deal with us, is th' only course ;
 We have no title nor pretence 35
 To body, soul, or conscience ;
 But ought to fall to that man's share
 That claims us for his proper ware.
 These are the motives which, t^e induce
 Or fright us into love, you use. 40
 A pretty new way of gallanting,
 Between soliciting and ranting ;
 Like sturdy beggars, that intreat
 For charity at once, and threat.
 But since you undertake to prove 45
 Your own propriety in love,
 As if we were but lawful prize
 In war between two enemies,
 Or forfeitures, which ev'ry lover,
 That wou'd but sue for, might recover, 50
 It is not hard to understand
 The myst'ry of this bold demand,
 That cannot at our persons aim,
 But something capable of claim.
 'Tis not those paultry counterfeit 55
 French stones, which in our eyes you set,
 But our right diamonds, that inspire
 And set your am'rous hearts on fire.
 Nor can those false St. Martin's beads,
 Which on our lips you lay for reds, 60
 And make us wear, like Indian dames,
 Add fuel to your scorching flames ;

But those true rubies of the rock,
 Which in our cabinets we lock.
 'Tis not those orient pearls our teeth, 65
 That you are so transported with ;
 But those we wear about our necks,
 Produce those amorous effects.
 Nor is't those threads of gold, our hair,
 The periwigs you make us wear, 70
 But those bright guineas in our chests,
 That light the wild fire in your breasts.
 These love-tricks I've been vers'd in so,
 That all their sly intrigues I know,
 And can unriddle, by their tones, 75
 Their mystick cabals and jargones ;
 Can tell what passions, by their sounds,
 Pine for the beauties of my grounds ;
 What raptures fond and amorous
 O' th' charms and graces of my house ; 80
 What extasy and scorching flame,
 Burns for my money in my name ;
 What from th' unnatural desire
 To beasts and cattle takes its fire ;
 What tender sigh, and trickling tear, 85
 Longs for a thousand pounds a year ;
 And languishing transports are fond
 Of statute, mortgage, bill, and bond.
 These are th' attracts which most men fall
 Inamour'd, at first sight, withal : 90
 To these th' address with serenades,
 And court with balls and masquerades ;
 And yet, for all the yearning pain
 Y' have suffer'd for their loves in vain,
 I fear they'll prove so nice and coy 95
 To have, and t'hold. and to enjoy.

TO THE KNIGHT.

363

That all your oaths and labour lost,
 They'll ne'er turn ladies of the post.
 This is not meant to disapprove
 Your judgment in your choice of love ; 100
 Which is so wise, the greatest part
 Of mankind study't as an art ;
 For love shou'd, like a deodand,
 Still fall to th' owner of the land ;
 And where there's substance for its ground, 105
 Cannot but be more firm and sound
 Than that which has the slightest basis
 Of airy virtue, wit, and graces ;
 Which is of such thin subtlety,
 It steals and creeps in at the eye, 110
 And, as it can't endure to stay,
 Steals out again as nice a way.

But love, that its extraction owns
 From solid gold and precious stones,
 Must, like its shining parents, prove 115
 As solid and as glorious love.
 Hence 'tis you have no way t' express
 Our charms and graces but by these :
 For what are lips, and eyes, and teeth,
 Which beauty invades and conquers with, 120
 But rubies, pearls, and diamonds,
 With which a philter-love commands ?

This is the way all parents prove,
 In managing their childrens' love ;
 That force 'em t' intermarry and wed, 125
 As if th' were bur'ing of the dead ;
 Cast earth to earth, as in the grave,
 To join in wedlock all they have :
 And when the settlement's in force,
 Take all the rest for better or worse :

For money has a power above
The stars and fate to manage love ;
Whose arrows, learned poets hold,
That never miss, are tipp'd with gold.
And though some say, the parents' claims
To make love in their childrens' names,
Who many times at once provide
The nurse, the husband, and the bride ;
Feel darts and charms, attracts and flames,
And woo and contract in their names ;
And as they christen, use to marry 'em,
And, like their gossips, answer for 'em ;
Is not to give in matrimony,
But sell and prostitute for money ;
'Tis better than their own betrothing,
Who often do't for worse than nothing ;
And when th' are at their own dispose,
With greater disadvantage choose.
All this is right ; but for the course
You take to do't, by fraud or force,
'Tis so ridiculous, as soon
As told, 'tis never to be done ;
No more than setters can betray,
That tell what tricks they are to play.
Marriage, at best, is but a vow,
Which all men either break or bow :
Then what will those forbear to do,
Who perjure when they do but woo ?
Such as before-hand swear and lie
For earnest to their treachery ;
And, rather than a crime confess,
With greater strive to make it less ;
Like thieves, who, after sentence past,
Maintain their innocence to the last ;

TO THE KNIGHT.

365

And when their crimes were made appear

165

As plain as witnesses can swear,

Yet, when the wretches come to die,

Will take upon their death a lie.

Nor are the virtues you confest

T' your ghostly father, as you guest,

170

So slight as to be justify'd

By being as shamefully deny'd.

As if you thought your word would pass

Point-blank on both sides of a case ;

Or credit were not to be lost

175

B' a brave Knight-Errant of the Post,

That eats perfidiously his word,

And swears his ears through a two inch board :

Can own the same thing, and disown,

And perjure booty, Pro and Con :

180

Can make the Gospel serve his turn,

And help him out, to be forsworn ;

When 'tis laid hands upon, and kist,

To be betray'd and sold like Christ.

These are the virtues in whose name

185

A right to all the world you claim,

And boldly challenge a dominion,

In grace and nature, o'er all women :

Of whom no less will satisfy

Than all the sex your tyranny.

190

Although you'll find it a hard province,

With all your crafty frauds and covins,

To govern such a num'rous crew,

Who, one by one, now govern you :

For if you all were SOLOMONS,

195

And wise and great as he was once,

You'll find they're able to subdue

(As they did him) and baffle you.

And if you are impos'd upon
 'Tis by your own temptation done, 200
 That with your ignorance invite,
 And teach us how to use the slight.
 For when we find y' are still more taken
 With false attracts of our own making;
 Swear that's a rose, and that a stone, 205
 Like sots, to us that laid it on,
 And what we did but slightly prime,
 Most ignorantly daub in rhyme;
 You force us, in our own defences,
 To copy beams and influences; 210
 To lay perfections on the graces,
 And draw attracts upon our faces :
 And, in compliance to your wit,
 Your own false jewels counterfeit.
 For, by the practice of those arts 215
 We gain a greater share of hearts;
 And those deserve in reason most
 That greatest pains and study cost;
 For great perfections are, like heaven,
 Too rich a present to be given. 220
 Nor are these master-strokes of beauty
 To be perform'd without hard duty,
 Which, when they're nobly done and well,
 The simple natural excell.
 How fair and sweet the planted rose 225
 Beyond the wild in hedges grows !
 For without art the noblest seeds
 Of flow'rs degen'rate into weeds.
 How dull and rugged, e'er 'tis ground
 And polish'd, looks a diamond ! 230
 Though Paradise were e'er so fair,
 It was not kept so without care.

TO THE KNIGHT.

567

The whole world, without art and dress,
 Would be but one great wilderness ;
 And mankind but a savage herd, 235
 For all that nature has conferr'd.
 This does but rough-hew, and design ;
 Leaves art to polish and refine,
 Though women first were made for men,
 Yet men were made for them agen ; 240
 For when (outwitted by his wife)
 Man first turn'd tenant but for life,
 If women had not interven'd,
 How soon had mankind had an end !
 And that it is in being yet, 245
 To us alone you are in debt.
 And where's your liberty of choice,
 And our unnatural No Voice ?
 Since all the privilege you boast,
 And falsly usurp'd, or vainly lost, 250
 Is now our right ; to whose creation
 You owe your happy restoration ;
 And if we had not weighty cause
 To not appear, in making laws,
 We could, in spite of all your tricks, 255
 And shallow, formal politicks;
 Force you our managements t' obey,
 As we to yours (in shew) give way.
 Hence 'tis that, while you vainly strive
 T' advance your high prerogative, 260
 You basely, after all your braves,
 Submit, and own yourselves our slaves ;
 And 'cause we do not make it known,
 Nor publickly our int'rest own,
 Like sots, suppose we have no shares 265
 In ord'ring you and your affairs ;

THE LADY'S ANSWER

When all your empire and command
 You have from us at second hand :
 As if a pilot, that appears
 To sit still only while he steers,
 And does not make a noise and stir
 Like ev'ry common mariner,
 Knew nothing of the card, nor stir,
 And did not guide the man of war ;
 Nor we, because we don't appear
 In councils, do not govern there ;
 While, like the mighty **M. PRESTER JOHN**,
 Whose person none dares look upon,
 But is preserv'd in close disguise,
 From being made cheap to vulgar eyes,
 W' enjoy as large a pow'r unseen,
 To govern him, as he does men ;
 And in the right of our Pope **JOAN**,
 Make Emp'rors at our feet fall down ;
 Or a **JOAN DE PUCCEL**'s braver name,
 Our right to arms and conduct claim ;
 Who, though a spinster, yet was able
 To serve **FRANCE** for a Grand Constable.
 We make and execute all laws ;
 Can judge the judges and the cause ;
 Prescribe all rules of right or wrong
 To th' long robe, and the longer tongue ;
 'Gainst which the world has no defence,
 But our more pow'rful eloquence.
 We manage things of greatest weight
 In all the world's affairs of state :
 Are ministers of war and peace,
 That sway all nations how we please.
 We rule all churches and their flocks,
 Heretical and orthodox ;

2.

29.

30

TO THE KNIGHT.

369

And are the heavenly vehicles
 O' th' spirits in all conventicles.
 By us is all commerce and trade
 Improv'd, and manag'd, and decay'd ;
 For nothing can go off so well,
 Nor bears that price, as what we sell.
 We rule in ev'ry publique meeting,
 And make men do what we judge fitting;
 Are magistrates in all great towns,
 Where men do nothing but wear gowns,
 We make the man of war strike sail,
 And to our braver conduct veil,
 And, when h' has chac'd his enemies,
 Submit to us upon his knees.
 Is there an officer of state
 Untimely rais'd, or magistrate,
 That's haughty and imperious ?
 He's but a journeyman to us.
 That as he gives us cause to do't,
 Can keep him in, or turn him out.

305

310

315

320

We are your guardians, that increase
 Or waste your fortunes how we please ;
 And, as you humour us, can deal
 In all your matters, ill or well.

'Tis we that can dispose alone,
 Whether your heirs shall be your own,
 To whose integrity you must,
 In spite of all your caution, trust ;
 And, 'less you fly beyond the seas,
 Can fit you with what heirs we please ;
 And force you t' own 'em, though begotten
 By French Valets or Irish Footmen,
 Nor can the vigorous^{est} course
 Prevail, unless to make us worse ;

325

330

Who still, the harsher we are us'd, 335
 Are further off from b'ing reduc'd :
 And scorn t' abate, for any ills,
 The least punctilios of our wills.
 Force does but whet out wits t' apply
 Arts, born with us, for remedy ; 340
 Which all your politicks, as yet,
 Have ne'er been able to defeat :
 For when y' have try'd all sorts of ways,
 What fools d' we make of you in plays !
 While all the favours we afford, 345
 Are but to girt you with the sword,
 To fight our battles in our steads,
 And have your brains beat out o' your heads ;
 Encounter, in despite of nature,
 And fight at once, with fire and water, 350
 With pirates, rocks, and storms, and seas,
 Our pride and vanity t' appease ;
 Kill one another, and cut throats ;
 For our good graces, and best thoughts ;
 To do your exercise for honour, 355
 And have your brains beat out the sooner ;
 Or crack'd, as learnedly, upon
 Things that are never to be known ;
 And still appear the more industrious,
 The more your projects are prepost'rous ; 360
 To square the circle of the arts,
 And run stark mad to shew your parts ;
 Expound the oracle of laws,
 And turn them which way we see cause :
 Be our sollicitors and agents, 365
 And stand for us in all engagements.
 And these are all the mighty pow'rs
 You vainly boast to cry down ours ;

TO THE KNIGHT.

371

And what in real value's wanting,
Supply with vapouring and ranting ;

370

Because yourselves are terrify'd,
And stoop to one another's pride,
Believe we have as little wit

To be out-hector'd, and submit ;
By your example, lose that right

375

In treaties which we gain'd in fight ;

And, terrify'd into an awe,

Pass on ourselves a ° Salique law :

Or, as some nations use, give place,

And truckle to your mighty race ;

380

Let men usurp th' unjust dominion,

As if they were the better women.

NOTES TO PART III. CANTO I.

15 ^a *AND more, &c.*] *Caligula* was one of the Emperors of Rome, son of *Germanicus* and *Agrippina*. He would needs pass for a god, and had the heads of the ancient statues of the gods taken off, and his own placed on in their stead; and used to stand between the statues of *Castor* and *Pollux* to be worshipped; and often bragged of lying with the Moon.

43 ^b *And us'd &c.*] *Philters* were love potions, reported to be much in request in former ages; but our true Knight-Errant Hero made use of no other but what his noble achievements by his sword produced.

52 ^c *To th' Ordeal, &c.*] Ordeal trials were, when supposed criminals, to discover their innocence, went over several red-hot coulter irons. These were generally such whose chastity was suspected, as the vestal virgins, &c.

93 ^d *So Spanish Heroes, &c.*] The young Spaniards signalize their valour before the Spanish ladies at bull feasts, which often prove very hazardous, and sometimes fatal to them. It is performed by attacking of a wild bull, kept on purpose; and let loose at the combatant; and he that kills most, carries the laurel, and dwells highest in the ladies' favour.

137 ^e *To pawn, &c.*] His exterior ears were gone before, and so out of danger; but by inward ears is here meant his conscience.

252 ^f *Loud as, &c.*] A speaking trumpet, by which the voice may be heard at a great distance, very useful at sea.

276 ^g *As if th' had, &c.*] This alludes to some abject letchers, who used to be disciplined with amorous lashes by their mistresses.

323 ^h *Bewitch Hermetick Men, &c.*] *Hermes Trismegistus*, an Egyptian Philosopher, and said to

have lived *Anno Mundi* 2076, in the reign of Ninus, after Moses. He was a wonderful philosopher and proved that there was but one God, the creator of all things; and was the author of several most excellent and useful inventions. But those Hermetick Men here mentioned, though the pretended sectators of this great man, are nothing else but a wild and extravagant sort of enthusiasts, who make a hodge-podge of Religion and Philosophy, and produce nothing but what is the object of every considering person's contempt.

326 ^l *Potosi.*] Potosi is a city of Peru, the mountains whereof afford great quantities of the finest silver in all the Indies.

603 ^k *More wretched, &c.*] *Villainage* was an ancient tenure, by which the tenants were obliged to perform the most abject and slavish services for their lords.

639 ^l *Like Indian Widows, &c.*] The Indian women, richly attired, are carried in a splendid and pompous machine to the funeral pile where the bodies of their deceased husbands are to be consumed, and there voluntarily throw themselves into it, and expire; and such as refuse, their virtue is ever after suspected, and they live in the utmost contempt.

647 ^m *For as the Pythagorean, &c.*] It was the opinion of *Pythagoras* and his followers, that the soul transmigrated (as they termed it) into all the diverse species of animals; and so was differently disposed and affected, according to their different natures and constitutions.

707 ⁿ *For tho' Chinese, &c.*] The Chinese men of quality, when their wives are brought to bed, are nursed and tended with as much care as women here, and are supplied with the best strengthening and nourishing diet, in order to qualify them for future services.

751 ^o *Transform them into Rams, &c.*] The Sirens according to the poets, were three sea-monsters, ^k

men and half fish : their names were Parthenope, Ignea and Leucosia. Their usual residence was about the island of Sicily, where, by the charming melody of their voices, they used to detain those that heard them, and then transform them into some sort of brute animals.

755 *p* *By the Husband Mandrake, &c.]* Naturalists report, that if a male and female Mandrake lie near each other, there will often be heard a sort of murmuring noise.

797 *q* *The World is but two Parts, &c.]* The equinoctial divides the globe into North and South.

819 *r* *Unless among the Amazons, &c.]* The Amazons were women of Scythia, of heroic and great achievements. They suffered no men to live among them; but once every year used to have conversation with men, of the neighbouring countries, by which if they had a male child, they presently either killed or crippled it; but if a female, they brought it up to the use of arms, and burnt off one breast, leaving the other to suckle girls.

865 *s* *The Nymphs of chaste Diana's, &c.]* Diana's Nymphs, all of whom vowed perpetual virginity, and were much celebrated for the exact observation of their vow.

866 *t* *Leukner's Lane.]* Some years ago swarmed with notoriously lascivious and profligate strumpets.

877 *u* *The Reason of it is, &c.]* Demanding the clergy of her belly, which, for the reasons aforesaid, is pleaded in excuse by those who take the liberty to oblige themselves and friends.

1086 *w* *As Ironside or Hardiknut, &c.]* Two famous and valiant princes of this country; the one a Saxon, the other a Dane.

1131 *x* *But those that trade in Geomancy, &c.]* The Lapland Magi. The Laplanders are an idolatrous people, far North: and it is very credibly reported, by authors and persons that have travelled in their

country, that they do perform things incredible by what is vulgarly called *Magick*.

1158 *y To burning with, &c.]* An allusion to cauterizing in apoplexies, &c.

1321 *z The Queen of Night, &c.]* The moon influences the tides, and predominates over all humid bodies; and persons distempered in mind are called Lunatics.

1344 *a And growing to thy Horse, &c.]* The Centaurs were a people of Thessaly, and supposed to be the first managers of horses; and the neighbouring inhabitants never having seen any such thing before, fabulously reported them monsters, half men and half horses.

1423 *b Sir (quoth the Voice) &c.]* *Sophi* is at present the name of the kings of Persia, not superadded, as Pharaoh was to the kings of Egypt, but the name of the family itself; and religion of *Hali*, whose descendants by *Fatimas*, Mahomet's daughter, took the name of *Sophi*.

1451 *c Wear wooden Peccadillos &c.]* *Peccadillos* were stiff pieces that went about the neck, and round about the shoulders, to pin the band, worn by persons nice in dressing; but his wooden one is a pillory.

1483 *d Hence 'tis Possessions, &c.]* Criminals, in their indictments, are charged with not having the fear of God before their eyes, but being led by the instigation of the Devil.

1521 *e When to a legal Uslegation, &c.]* When they return the excommunication into the Chancery, there is issued out a writ against the person.

1524 *f Distrain on Soul, &c.]* Excommunication, which deprives men from being Members of the visible Church, and formally delivers them up to the Devil.

NOTES TO PART III. CANTO II.

1 g *The Learned write, &c.*] An insect breeze. Breezes often bring along with them great quantities of insects, which some are of opinion, are generated from viscous exhalations in the air; but our Author makes them proceed from a cow's dung, and afterwards become a plague to that whence it received its original.

13 h *For as the Persian, &c.*] The Magi were priests and philosophers among the Persians, intrusted with the government both civil and ecclesiastick, much addicted to the observation of the stars. Zoroaster is reported to be their first author. They had this custom amongst them, to preserve and continue their families by incestuous copulation with their own mothers. Some are of opinion, that the three wise men that came out of the East to worship our Saviour were some of these.

51 i *At Michael's Term, &c.*] St. Michael, an archangel, mentioned in St. Jude's Epistle, Verse 9.

78 k *And laid about, &c.*] William Prynne, of Lincoln's-Inn, Esq. born at Swanswick, who stiled himself *Utter Barrister*, a very warm person, and voluminous writer; and after the Restoration, keeper of the records in the Tower.

146 l *As Dutch Boors, &c.*] It is reported of the Dutch women, that making so great use of stoves, and often putting them under their petticoats, they engender a kind of ugly monster, which is called a Sooterkin.

151 m *T' out-cant the Babylonian, &c.*] At the building of the Tower of Babel, when God made the confusion of languages.

215 n *Toss'd in a furious Hurricane, &c.*] At Oliver's death was a most furious tempest, such as had not been known in the memory of man, or hardly ever recorded to have been in this nation.

mosque; the roof whereof was of loadstone, and ordering his corpse, when he was dead, to be put into an iron coffin, and brought into that place, the loadstone soon attracted it near the top, where it still hangs in the air.

No less fabulous is what the legend says of *Ignatius Loyola*, that his zeal and devotion transported him so, that at his prayers he has been seen to be raised from the ground for some considerable time together,

650 *a* *As easy as Serpents, &c.*] Naturalists report, that Snakes, Serpents, &c. cast their skins every year.

655 *a* *As Barnacles turn Soland Geese, &c.*] It is said that in the Islands of the Orcades, in Scotland, there are trees which bear those *barnacles*, which dropping off into the water, receive life, and become those birds called *soland geese*.

663 *b* *So he that keeps the Gate of Hell, &c.*] The poets feign the dog *Cerberus*, that is the porter of hell, to have three heads.

685 *c* *The GIBELLINES, &c.*] Two great factions in Italy, distinguished by those names, which miserably distracted and wasted it about the year 1130.

841 *d* *When three Saints Ears, &c.*] *Burton*, *Prynn*, and *Bastwick*, three notorious ringleaders of the faction, just at the beginning of the late horrid rebellion.

894 *e* *But Fisher's Folly, &c.*] *Fisher's Folly*, was where Devonshire-square now stands, and was a great place of consultation in those days.

907 *f* *Cut out more Work, &c.*] *Plato's* year, or the grand revolution of the intire machine of the world, was accounted 4000 years.

1200 *g* *T' your great Croysado General, &c.*] *General Fairfax*, who was soon laid aside after he had done some of their drudgery for them.

1241 *h* *To pass for deep and learned Scholars, &c.*]

Two ridiculous scribblers, that were often pestering the world with nonsense.

1230 ^l *Like Sir Pride, &c.*] The one a brewer, the other a shoemaker, and both colonels in the rebels' army.

1505 ^k *The beastly Rabble that came down, &c.*] This is an accurate description of the mob's burning rumps upon the admission of the secluded Members, in contempt of the Rump-Parliament.

1534 ^l *Be ready listed under DON.*] The hangman's name at that time was Don.

1550 ^m *They've roasted Cook already and. PRIDE in.*] Cook acted as solicitor-general against King Charles the First at his trial; and afterwards received his just reward for the same. *Pride*, a colonel in the Parliament's army.

1564 ⁿ *Their Founder was a blown up Soldier.*] *Ignatius Loyola*, the founder of the society of the Jesuits, was a gentleman of Biscay, in Spain, and bred a soldier; was at Pampelune when it was besieged by the French in the year 1521; and was so very lame in both feet, by the damage he sustained there, that he was forced to keep his bed.

1585 ^o *And from their Coptick Priests, Kircherus:*] *Athanasius Kircher*, a Jesuit, hath wrote largely on the Egyptian mystical learning.

1587 ^p *For, as the Egyptians us'd by Bees, &c.*] The Egyptians represented their kings, (many of whose names were *Ptolomy*) under the hieroglyphick of a bee, dispensing honey to the good and virtuous, and having a sting for the wicked and dissolute.

This *Sterry* reported something ridiculously fabulous concerning *Oliver*, not unlike what *Proculus* did of *Romulus*.

224 o *False Heaven, &c.*] After the Restoration, *Oliver's* body was dug up, and his head set at the farther end of Westminster-hall, near which place there is an house of entertainment, which is commonly known by the name of *Heaven*.

227 p So *Romulus, &c.*] A Roman Senator, whose name was *Proculus*, and much beloved by *Romulus*, made oath before the Senate, that this prince appeared to him after his death, and predicted the future grandeur of that city, promising to be protector of it; and expressly charged him, that he should be adored there under the name of *Quirinus*; and he had his temple on Mount *Quirinale*.

231 q Next his Son, &c.] *Oliver's* eldest son *Richard* was, by him before his death, declared his successor; and, by order of privy-council, proclaimed *Lord Protector*, and received the compliments of congratulation and condolence, at the same time, from the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen: and addresses were presented to him from all parts of the nation, promising to stand by him with their lives and fortunes. He summoned a Parliament to meet at Westminster, which recognized him *Lord Protector*: yet, notwithstanding, *Fleetwood*, *Deshorough*, and their partizans, managed affairs so, that he was obliged to resign.

245 r To edify upon the Ruins, &c.] *John of Leyden*, whose name was *Buckhold*, was a butcher of the same place, but a crafty, eloquent, and seditious fellow, and one of those called *Anabaptists*. He went and set up at *Munster*; where, with *Knipperdoling*, and others of the same faction, they spread their abominable errors; and run about the streets in enthusiastical raptures, crying, Repent and be baptized, pronouncing dismal woes against all those that would not embrace their tenets. About the y

1533 they broke out into an open insurrection, and seized the palace and magazines, and grew so formidable that it was very dangerous for those who were not of their persuasion to dwell in Munster; but at length he and his associates being subdued and taken, he was executed at Munster, had his flesh pulled off by two executioners with red-hot pincers for the space of an hour, and then run through with a sword.

351 * *'Mong these there was a Politician, &c.]* This was the famous E. of S. who was endued with a particular faculty of undermining and subverting all sorts of government.

409 † *And better than by Napier's Bones, &c.]* The famous Lord Napier, of Scotland, the first inventor of logarithms, contrived also a set of square pieces, with numbers on them, made generally of ivory, (which perform arithmetical and geometrical calculations,) and are commonly called Napier's Bones.

421 ‡ *To match this Saint, &c.]* The great colonel John Lilbourn, whose trial is so remarkable, and well known at this time.

475 † *The Trojan Mare, &c.]* After the Grecians had spent ten years in the siege of Troy, without the least prospect of success, they bethought of a stratagem, and made a wooden horse capable of containing a considerable number of armed men: this they filled with the choicest of their army, and then pretended to raise the siege; upon which the credulous Trojans made a breach in the walls of the city to bring in this fatal plunder; but when it was brought in, the inclosed heroes soon appeared, and surprizing the city, the rest entered in at the breach.

520 * *(I mean Margaret's Fast) &c.]* That Parliament used to have publick fasts kept in St. Margaret's church, Westminster, as is done to this present time.

605 † *To hang like Mahomet, &c.]* It is reported Mahomet the great impostor, that having built a

NOTES TO PART III. CANTO III.

8 9 *Than Hags with all their Imps and Teats.*] Alluding to the vulgar opinion, that witches have their imps, or familiar spirits, that are employed in their diabolical practices, and suck private teats they have about them.

15 † *As Rosi-crucian Virtuosos, &c.*] The *Resi-crucians* were a sect that appeared in Germany in the beginning of the XVIIth age. They are also called the Enlightened, Immortal, and Invisible. They are a very enthusiastical sort of men, and hold many wild and extravagant opinions.

36 † *From Marshal Legion's Regiment.*] He used to preach, as if they might expect legions to drop down from heaven, for the propagation of the good Old Cause.

145 † *More plainly than the Reverend Writer, &c.*] A most Reverend Prelate, A. B. of Y. who sided with the disaffected party,

261 † *If the Ancients crown'd their bravest Men, &c.*] The Romans highly honoured, and nobly rewarded, those persons that were instrumental in the preservation of the lives of their citizens, either in battle or otherwise.

305 † *Or else their Sultan Populaces, &c.*] The Author compares the arbitrary actings of the ungovernable mob to the Sultan or Grand Signior, who very seldom fails to sacrifice any of his chief commanders, called *Bassas*, if they prove unsuccessful in battle.

350 † *As the ancient Mice attack'd the Frogs*] *Hom*er wrote a poem of the War between the Mice and the Frogs.

383 † *And stout Rinaldo gain'd his Bride, &c.*] A story in *Tasso*, an Italian Poet, of a hero that gained his mistress by conquering her party.

577 *z An old dull Sot, who told the Clock, &c.]* *Prideaux*, a justice of peace, a very pragmatical busy person in those times, and a mercenary and cruel magistrate, infamous for the following methods of getting of money among many others.

589 *a And many a trusty Pimp and Coney, &c.]* There was a gaol for puny offenders.

599 *b Made Monsters fine, and Puppet-plays, &c.]* He extorted money from those that kept shows.

715 *c From Stiles's Pocket into Nokes's, &c.]* John a Nokes, and John a Stiles, are two fictitious names made use of in stating cases of law only.

742 *d On BONGEY for a Water Witch.]* *Bongey* was a Franciscan, and lived towards the end of the thirteenth century, a doctor of divinity in Oxford, and a particular acquaintance of Friar Bacon's. In that ignorant age, every thing that seemed extraordinary was reputed magick; and so both *Bacon* and *Bongey* went under the imputation of studying the black-art. *Bongey* also, publishing a treatise of Natural Magick, confirmed some well-meaning credulous people in this opinion; but it was altogether groundless; for *Bongey* was chosen provincial of his order, being a person of most excellent parts and piety.

NOTES ON HUDIBRAS'S EPISTLE TO HIS LADY.

113 *e Or who but Lovers can converse, &c.]* Metaphysicians are of opinion, that angels and souls departed, being divested of all gross matter, understand each other's sentiments by intuition, and consequently maintain a sort of conversation without the organs of speech.

121 *f Or Heav'n itself a Sin resent, &c.]* In regard children are capable of being inhabitants of Heaven, therefore it should not resent it as a crime to supply store of inhabitants for it.

173 *g You wound like Parthians while you fly, &c.]*



Parthians are the inhabitants of a province in Persia : They were excellent horsemen, and very exquisite at their bows ; and it is reported of them, that they generally slew more on their retreat than they did in the engagement.

188 * *Than Philip Nye's Thanksgiving Beard.*] One of the Assembly of Divines, very remarkable for the singularity of his beard.

237 * *To what a Height did Infant Rome, &c.*] When Romulus had built Rome, he made it an asylum, or place of refuge, for all malefactors, and others obnoxious to the laws to retire to ; by which means it soon came to be very populous ; but when he began to consider, that, without propagation, it would soon be destitute of inhabitants, he invented several fine shows, and invited the young Sabine women, then neighbours to them ; and when they had them secure, they ravished them ; from whence proceeded so numerous an offspring.

252 * *Till Alimony' or Death them parts.*] Alimony is an allowance that the law gives the woman for her separate maintenance upon living from her husband. That and death are reckoned the only separations in a married state.

NOTES ON THE LADY'S ANSWER TO THE KNIGHT.

153 * *Whose Arrows learned Poets hold, &c.*] The poets feign Cupid to have two sorts of arrows ; the one tipped with gold, and the other with lead. The golden always inspire and inflame love in the persons he wounds with them : but, on the contrary, the leaden create the utmost aversion and hatred. With the first of these he shot Apollo, and with the other Daphne, according to Ovid.

277 * *While, like the mighty Prester John, &c.*] Prester John, an absolute prince, emperor of Abyssinia or Ethiopia. One of them is reported to have had seventy kings for his vassals, and so superb

arrogant, that none durst look upon him without his permission.

285 *a* Or Joan de Pucel's braver Name.] Joan of Arc, called also the *Pucelle*, or Maid of Orleans. She was born at the town of Damremi, on the Meuse, daughter of *James de Arc*, and *Isabella Romee*; and was bred up a shepherdess in the country. At the age of eighteen or twenty she pretended to an express commission from God to go to the relief of Orleans, then besieged by the English, and defended by *John Compt de Dennis*, and almost reduced to the last extremity. She went to the coronation of Charles the Seventh, when he was almost ruined. She knew that prince in the midst of his nobles, though meanly habited. The doctors of divinity, and members of parliament, openly declared that there was something supernatural in her conduct. She sent for a sword, which lay in the tomb of a knight, which was behind the great altar of the church of *St. Katharine de Forbois*, upon the blade of which the cross and *flower-de-luces* were engraven, which put the king in a very great surprise, in regard none besides himself knew of it. Upon this he sent her with the command of some troops, with which she relieved Orleans, and drove the English from it, defeated *Talbot* at the battle of *Pattai*, and recovered *Champagne*. At last she was unfortunately taken prisoner in a sally at *Champagne* in 1430, and tried for a witch or sorceress, condemned, and burnt in *Rouen* market-place in May 1430.

378 *a* Pass on ourselves a Salique Law.] The *Salique Law* is a law in France, whereby it is enacted, that no female shall inherit that crown.

I N D E X.

	Page	Line
Æ RA of the Poem - - -	1-2	to 15
Affidavit-Men, their Practice	346	725
Their Plying-places - - -	347	760
<i>Anaxagoras</i> , Astronomical Tenets of his	201	737
Astronomical Tenets of others, as solid	204	865
Art, its Advantages over Nature	367	233
Author, his Invocation - - -	20	645
Integrity - - -	30	35
Authors of Rhyme, their Reason for Coup- lets - - -	125	27
Authors of Romances censured - - -	29	11
	125	13
	153	41
BAGPIPES compared - - -	170	624
Bear-baiting, the Adventure of - - -	21	677
Its Antiquity and Derivation	21	683
Proclamation on the Solemnity - - -	21	692
Blows the Method of making free by the <i>Romans</i> - - -	131	235
Of restoring to Grace, &c. by <i>Prestor John</i>	131	239
Best Trial of Valour in Soldiers	131	249
<i>Bruin</i> (the Bear) - - -	36	249
His genealogy - - -	37	265
Diet - - -	37	271
Travels - - -	37	281
Resentment on receiving <i>Hudibras's</i> Fall	55	887
Conduct in Distress - - -	65	37
Relieved by <i>Trulla</i> and <i>Cerdon</i> - - -	67	97
Compared to <i>Achilles</i> - - -	68	139
CERDON (the Cöbler) - - -	41	409
His paring Knife - - -	41	418
Descent - - -	41	422
Polemic Qualities, &c. - - -	41	430
Assists in the Bear's Relief - - -	67	97

INDEX.

	Page	Line
Reply to <i>Trulla's</i> Speech on that Occasion	67	179
His Answers to <i>Orsin's</i> Speech on the Distress of his Bear	- 72	271
<i>Cerdon</i> presses to the Relief of <i>Magnano</i>	80	562
Disarms <i>Hudibras</i>	83	666
Assists in <i>Trulla's</i> Triumph	92	967
Cheating and being cheated, the Pleasure of it	- 179	1
Instances of the latter	179-7	to 37
Chymistry, a certain Experiment of it	137	425
<i>Colom</i> (the Hostler)	42	442
Compared to <i>Hercules</i>	42	458
Engages <i>Ralpho</i>	53	826
Attacks <i>Hudibras</i>	79	519
Assists in <i>Trulla's</i> Triumph	92	968
Commanders, a Peculiar of theirs	60	1048
Commonwealth resty to the Rider	28	928
Mythologically compared to a Rump	322	1598
Conjurors, their various Ways of Practice	196	699
	to 640	
Court of Conscience ought to assist itself	161	299
Cowards, none that venture a second Beat- ing	- 131	229
Only entitled to Horns and Petticoats	179	723
<i>Crowdero</i> (the Fidler)	32	105
His misfortune in a Prize of his Profession	33	133
Resolution and Fate in the first Action	56	912
Led in Triumph by <i>Hudibras</i>	62	1125
Put in the Stocks	63	1168
Released by <i>Magnano</i>	93	995
Crows, Birds of evil Omen	200	707
Cucking-stool, the Cavalcade of it compar- ed to an Ovation	- 173	731
DISPUTANTS compared and exposed	152	1
Disputes, how resolved at last	166	481
Divinity, Niceties therein exposed	6	163
<i>Diurnals</i> (News-Papers) an expedient to lessen the Price of Whetstones	126	57

INDEX.

	Page	Line
<i>Druids</i> borrow Money to be repaid in the		
next World	208	975
EARS the Poles on which Heads turn	399	815
Injustice of cropping them for Perjury	350	49
Echo described	69	189
Epistle from <i>Hudibras</i> to <i>Sidrophel</i> , from p. 222		
to 226		
From <i>Hudibras</i> to his Lady, from p. 349 to 359		
Subscription, Date, Seal, and Direction	376	841
Her Answer	from p. 360 to 371	382
Evening described	151	903
Excommunication a Distress on Soul and		
Body	272	1521
FAME described	125	45
Good and Evil Fame distinguished	126	69
Fear, the Effects of it	325	11
p. 374, l. 65	347	171
Too much and too little, equal	326	27
Epols found like Woodcocks	225	80
Their Stubbornness compared	289	481
Fortune of War	64	1
Her old Wont	79	515
A Case out of her Reach	90	877
GRACE and Virtue too near a-kin to be		
coupled	265	1293
HALTER , Rise from thence the highest	313	1307
Hanging, a Description of it	304	995
Goes with Matrimony by Destiny	385	683
No Chance in it	ib.	687
Heralds, their Power in Pedigree	199	669
Heroes, their Trade	38	321
Their Reverse	ib.	326
Heroines, a Digression against them	40	379
Honour, how attained	28	913
Different Effects of Sword and Cudgel		
on it	53	810
A Definition of it	95	100
Hurt past Cure	130	

INDEX.

	Page	Line
ting no Blemish	131	21
as if cracked	163	38
ds Oaths	ib.	389
nmoners Huffs	ib.	391
upared	ib.	393
ere lodged	210	1067
IBRAS (Sir S— L—, p. 39.		
900) His Politick Character	2	15
guages	3	51
ick	ib.	65
torick	4	81
story	ib.	91
thematics	5	119
losophy and Metaphysicks	ib.	128
ool-learning	6	151
igion	7	189
Personal Character—His Beard	8	241
k	10	287
ly	ib.	296
Equipage—His Doublet	10	305
eches	ib.	310
rd	11	351
bbard	12	363
gger	ib.	375
tols	13	391
Activity in Mounting	ib.	405
Horse described	{ 14	423
	{ 28	921
Squire	15	457
See <i>Ralpho</i> .		
ompared with <i>Ralpho</i>	20	627
venture of the Bear-baiting	21	677
ech thereon to <i>Ralpho</i>	22	717
Conversation continued and applied		
o Synods	to	919
duct before the first Action	31	71
Speech to the Enemy	43	494
ge and Demand of the Fidler	48	662

I N D E X.

	Page	Line
<i>Hudibras's Reply to Talgol's Answer</i>	51	742
Attacks him	52	776
Leads <i>Crowdero</i> in Triumph	62	1125
Puts him in the Stocks	63	1167
Pangs for his Mistress	73	309
Her Qualities	<i>ib.</i>	321
Resolution to re-attack her	75	371
Soliloquy thereon	<i>ib.</i>	381
Speech to <i>Ralpho</i> before the second Action	77	453
Invokes his Mistress	78	477
Conduct in disposing the Battle	<i>ib.</i>	481
In advancing	79	501
Fatality in getting and losing advantages	<i>ib.</i>	529
Desponding Answer to <i>Ralpho</i>	81	585
Re-attempt	83	655
Welcome to a supposed Victory	84	687
Speech to <i>Ralpho</i> thereon	85	724
Reply to <i>Ralpho's</i> Answer	86	757
Is defeated by <i>Trulla</i>	87	780
Answer to her Harangue thereon	<i>ib.</i>	795
Ill luck and Defeat in a second Trial		
with her	88	885
Answer to her insulting him	89	869
to her Reply	90	897
Surrenders Prisoner to her	91	915
Led in Triumph	92	961
Put in the Stocks	93	1001
Consoles himself	94	1009
Answer to <i>Ralpho's</i> Reply thereto	95	1073
The Conversation continued on <i>Presbytery</i> , <i>Synods, Presbyters, Lay-Elders, &c.</i>	to	1382
Behaviour on receiving his Mistress's Visit there	127	101
Address to her	108	141
Answer to his Mistress's Reply	129	161
The Conversation continued on the For- tune of War, Pain, Honour, Valour, Love, and Whipping	to	89
Swears to whip himself as enjoined by her		150

I N D E X.

	Page	Line
<i>Hudibras</i> Advises and debates with	153	55
<i>Ralpho</i> , how to avoid both Whipping and Oath		540
Has judgment to be whipped by Proxy	165	437
Makes <i>Ralpho</i> his Proxy	ib.	441
Debate of it on Refusal continued	to	560
Adventure of the Riding	168	565
Compared to a <i>Roman</i> Triumph	171	665
Reply to <i>Ralpho's</i> Dissent	173	713
Advances to attack the Leader	174	753
Is attacked himself	176	815
Flies the Field	177	855
His consolatory Discourse on the Occasion	ib.	849
Resolution to swear he has Penance performed	178	885
Expostulation thereon	181	59
Is advised by <i>Ralpho</i> to consult <i>Sidrophel</i> , the cunning Man, in the Matter	182	105
Questions the Lawfulness of it	183	125
Owens his Conviction	184	189
Resolves to consult him	185	191
Compliments <i>Sidrophel</i>	195	543
Reply to <i>Sidrophel's</i> artful Return	ib.	553
Reply to his telling him the Occasion of his Coming	ib.	563
Opposes <i>Astrology</i> , its Professors, Practices, &c.	from ib. to	565 976
Falls out with <i>Sidrophel</i> , and dispatches <i>Ralpho</i> for a Constable	209	1015
Disarms and defeats him, and wounds <i>Whachum</i>	210	1057
Speech to the Vanquished	ib.	1071
Plunders <i>Sidrophel</i>	211	1085
The Booty	ib.	1088
Resolves to march off, and lurch <i>Ralpho</i>	213	1149
Speed and Activity in the Execution	214	1183
<i>Epistle to Sidrophel</i>	223	
<i>Experience in Love Affairs</i>	228	31

INDEX.

	Page	Line
Mudibras's Relapse and Resolution to at-		
tack his Mistress - - -	<i>ib.</i>	37
Arrives at her House - - -	232	150
Address to her - - -	<i>ib.</i>	163
Dialogue between him and her, on assur-		
ing her of the performance of oath, &c.		
continued to - - -		536
Claims her Promise of Marriage	243	539
The Managements and Comforts } <i>from</i> <i>ib.</i>		545
of it debated } <i>to</i>		986
Is frightened, and brought to } <i>from</i>	258	1053
Confession - - -		<i>to</i> 1310
Upbraided with his past conduct, &c.	267	1339
Dialogues it with <i>Ralpho</i> as a } <i>from</i>	268	1400
Spirit on the same Subject } <i>to</i>		1566
Is carried off by him - - -	273	1571
Speed in escaping - - -	274	1599
Dialogue between him and <i>Ralpho</i> on		
the Discovery of each other - - -	328	103
Answer to <i>Ralpho's</i> advice - - -	340	512
Resolves to sue her Promise - - -	342	567
Character, &c. of his Lawyer - - -	<i>ib.</i>	577
Address to him - - -	343	621
His Case, with Responses - - -	<i>ib.</i>	633
The Lawyer's Opinion - - -	344	655
Debated with his Advice - - -	348	773
Epistle to the Lady - - -	349	
Subscription, Date, Seal, and Direction	359	341
	<i>to</i>	350
Hypocrisy described - - -	263	1221
The Effects of it - - -	264	1259
A Church Improvement - - -	318	1459
<i>IDUS</i> and <i>Calenda</i>, Quarter Days	206	917
Jealousy the clap of the mind - - -	248	701
Impostors when past their labour	226	121
Impudence a claim to every thing - - -	<i>ib.</i>	109
Independent, difference between him and		
Presbyterian - - -	276	45
Post in Reformation and Qualifications	278	11

I. N. D. E. X,

	Page	Line
Independency described	293	603
Intelligible World described	185	225
Inward Light, its Advantages over Astrology	18	573
A mark of those that have it	241	481
Inward and outward Man, their opposi- tion to each other	154	77
Juries, their skill in palmistry	213	1167
Justice, a defect of it	63	1172
A <i>New England</i> instance of Justice	164	409
KICK o' th' A——— not painful	130	209
Artists in distinguishing the materials of Kicking and Cudgeling	131	221
<i>Pyrrhus</i> his use of kicking	ib.	257
Hurtful to Honour	210	1069
Knights Errant and their horses privileges, and address in encounters	237	317
Knight-Errantry, an error therein exploded	11	327
Lawyers no disputants on their profession	338	439
Exempt from Interlopers	339	493
Women's Tongues only exceed theirs	368	291
Lawyer— <i>Hudibras's</i> Lawyer, his Charac- ter, Qualifications, and Practice	342	577
Lay-Elders, their Character	100	1921
Learning opposed to gifts and light, what	108	1339
Loyalty, its character	280	173
Fate of its confessors	313	1301
Love, a sure shaft of it	73	309
More restless than, bangs or fleas	76	401
Secrecy in love dilated on	136	415
Characterized	136	417
Its readiest remedies	143	645
Rosemary, its use in love	149	847
Whipping, advantages and examples of it	ib.	845
Love, a <i>Pythagorean</i>	246	647
Hot and cold fits of it	246	655
The prevailing way, the justest in it	351	85
<i>Its Empire</i> and Prerogative	ib.	89
Interest of state in heaven	352	107
Offences pardonable here	ib.	119

INDEX.

	Page	Line
Love ought not to be punished by human laws	352	125
Land its firmest basis	363	104
Why charms exprest by gold and jewels	ib.	1113
The power of money in it	364	131
Love passions compared and explained	137	441
Wealth the top motive	137	453
	138	475
	361	55
Hanging or drowning the surest proof	138	481
A passionate poetical address	141	561
Ridiculed	142	591
Lye greedily swallowed	299	807
Lying, the fate of the faculty	226	105
MAGNANO (the tinker)	39	331
His habit	ib.	336
Skill in the black art	ib.	343
Performances	40	333
Arms	ib.	361
Amour	ib.	365
	See <i>Trulla</i> .	
His policy to relieve <i>Talgol</i> and <i>Colon</i>	53	836
Habergeon wounded	80	587
Assists in <i>Trulla's</i> triumph	92	967
Releases <i>Crowdero</i> from the stocks	93	987
Marriages not made in Heaven	243	545
No improvements of love	ib.	551
A beast that tires	244	569
Bargain at a venture	ib.	573
A vow broken or bent	364	155
Ring in matrimony useless	284	304
Goes with hanging by destiny	345	685
No chance in it	ib.	687
Merit to a half lover after it	356	263
Men their natural right over womankind	357	274
Advantages on the woman's side	370	339
Money, last reason of all things	314	132
Use in casting knaves	ib.	13
Power in love	364	

INDEX.

	Page	Line
Moon, the new discoveries in it -	200	727
Advantages thereby in trade, politicks, science, religion, &c. questionable	200	749
Setting, &c. described -	266	1321
NEW LIGHT described -	16	501
Derived -	199	773
OATHS, how obliging -	158	197
Criminal in the Maker -	160	271
Oath, of no force till broken -	160	277
Broken by the imposer -	163	377
Doubtful security :	233	205
The truest, toughest -	351	79
Obedience, the less the better -	293	610
Oliver, his death and apotheosis -	281	215
Orsin, (the Bearward) -	33	147
His descent -	35	219
Skill in medicine -	ib.	223
Famed for pitched fight, why -	69	171
Grief for his bear's distress -	ib.	179
Soliloquy thereon -	70	199
Harangues his party -	71	248
Attacks <i>Ralpho</i> -	78	491
Re-attacks him -	82	626
Rescues <i>Cerdon</i> , but unfortunately -	84	674
Assists in <i>Trulla's</i> triumph -	92	965
Owl in Rome, the occasion of a lustration	200	709
PAIN, stoically discussed -	130	183
Paper kite and lanthorn described -	191	415
Philosophical consolations -	94	1013
Presbyterian, the true church militant -	7	191
Presbyter described -	98	1161
Difference between him and independents	276	45
Power of the keys -	300	857
Presbytery defined -	99	1201
Providence directed, prescribed, and pro- posed to -	46	590
Public Faith, plate and preaching, misap- plied -	45	558
QUAKERS, their gospel -	158	219

I N D E X.

	Page	Line
Quakers compared	159	229
RALPHO his name	15	475
Parts	ib.	465
Birth	ib.	466
Pedigree	ib.	467
Gifts	ib.	479
Learning	17	529
Compared with <i>Hudibras</i>	19	624
Reply to his speech on bear-baiting	25	802
The conversation continued and applied to <i>Synods</i>	to	919
Engages <i>Colon</i>	53	826
Relieves <i>Hudibras</i> from <i>Crowdero</i>	56	932
Defeats <i>Crowdero</i>	57	950
Speech to the vanquished	ib.	956
To <i>Hudibras</i> thereon	58	983
	More	1034
Bears <i>Crowdero's</i> fiddle and case in triumph	62	1120
His engagement with <i>Cerdon</i>	80	551
Presses to the relief of <i>Hudibras</i>	ib.	561
Encourages him	81	569
Recovers his lost arms	82	611
Misfortune in remounting	ib.	619
Answer to <i>Hudibras's</i> harangue on his supposed victory	86	745
Led in triumph by <i>Trulla</i>	92	961
Put in the stocks	93	1001
Reply to <i>Hudibras's</i> consolatory speech	95	1057
The conversation continued on Presbyte-ry, Synods, Presbyters, Lay-Elders, &c.	to	1382
Opinion on <i>Hudibras's</i> oath made to his mistress, debated	from 155 to	95 541
Judges him to be whipped by proxy	165	437
Is made proxy himself	ib.	441
The debate of it on refusal continued to	168	560
Adventure of the riding	ib.	565
Dissents from <i>Hudibras's</i> opinion of it	172	695
Advances to attack the leader	175	7

I N D E X.

	Page	Line
<i>Ralpho</i> is attacked himself -	176	821
Flies the field - - -	<i>ib.</i>	835
Advises <i>Hudibras</i> to consult <i>Sidrophel</i> (the cunning man) -	183	105
Convinces him of its lawfulness -	183	129
	to	168
Sent for a constable to apprehend <i>Sidrophel</i> -	209	1015
Resolves instead of it to discover his pre- varication to his mistress -	230	99
Goes to her house and effects it -	231	148
Dialogue with him (as a spirit) {	<i>from</i> 268	1400
on his past conduct, &c. }	to	1556
Carries him off -	273	1571
Dialogue between him and <i>Hudibras</i> on his discovery of each other -	328	107
Advises him to sue her promise -	336	395
Ravens, birds of evil omen -	200	707
Retreat, the advantages of it -	82	607
Riding, the adventure of it -	168	565
Compared to a Roman triumph	169	591
Historical mistake of the latter rectified <i>ib.</i>		595
Pomp and cavalcade of a Riding described	170	603
Ring useless in matrimony -	284	304
Rump - - -	285	333
Sir A. A. C. an independent, or latitudi- narian member, his character -	285	35
— A Presbyterian member, his cha- racter - - -	287	421
The latter's speech - - -	289	495
The former's, by way of answer -	304	999
Contain the disputes between both parties, their hypocrisy, practices, politicks, &c. }	<i>from</i> 289	495
	to	1496
Rump burnt in effigy - - -	319	1505
Mythology of it - - -	321	1577
Running, the advantage and conduct of it	332	243
At least half the victory - - -	333	269
Running gets the whole - - -	333	289

INDEX.

	Page	Line
SAINTS , their property -	59	1010
May swear and forswear occasionally	155	103
Examples of it -	156	141
Exempted from the obligation of oaths by privilege -	158	201
Their privilege universal -	183	150
No sin in them to cheat the devil	<i>ib.</i>	135
Are his betters every way -	170	1471
Salvation mechanically obtained -	171	1493
Self not meant in self-denial -	169	459
Spheres, their musick not heard, why	142	617
Sieve and sheers turn as certain -	196	569
Stars, <i>astrological</i> queries and answers con- cerning them -	203	817
How ill used in calculations -	205	929
Abused in love affairs -	228	13
State sinners, prognosticators of changes	237	411
Sectaries, their birth and parentage -	275	7
Their natural constitution -	<i>ib.</i>	21
Sectaries, their politicks -	276	31
Their rule of faith -	317	1445
Souls doubtful security -	223	203
Prisoners on parole -	234	219
Stocks described -	62	1132
Swords and teeth compared -	57	261
Sympathy of spurring -	78	485
Sympathetick noses -	9	281
<i>Sidrophel</i> -	29	86
His qualifications -	182	105
Studies -	185	205
Advances therein -	<i>ib.</i>	209
Boasted knowledge -	<i>ib.</i>	223
Familiarity with the moon -	<i>ib.</i>	234
With the empire, &c. of the spheres	<i>ib.</i>	253
A remarkable instrument of his invention	187	261
Another -	<i>ib.</i>	277
Skill in occult sciences -	<i>ib.</i>	281
<i>In nature</i> -	188	3

INDEX.

	Page	Line
<i>Sidrophel's Zany</i> - - -	188	325
See <i>Whacum</i> .		
His observatory - - -	191	403
Skill in observation - - -	ib.	413
On the phenomenon of a paper-kite and lanthorn - - -	191	428
Instructions to <i>Whacum</i> on <i>Hudibras's</i> coming to him - - -	193	489
Juggle with him on his errand - -	194	519
Artful return to <i>Hudibras's</i> compliment	195	549
Tells him the occasion of his coming -	ib.	557
Defends astrology, its professors, } <i>from</i>	195	563
Practices, &c. }	to	976
Arms, and attacks him - - -	209	1041
Is disarmed, defeated, and plundered	210	1057
Policy in escaping - - -	211	1107
Synods, compared to bear-gardens -	96	1095
To the inquisition - - -	98	1149
A commonwealth of popery - - -	99	203
Synod-men, their characteristick -	102	1309
<i>TALGOL</i> (the butcher) - - -	38	299
His reply to <i>Hudibras</i> on the bear-baiting	49	684
Defence of his attack - - -	52	786
Dismounts him - - -	54	861
Is wounded - - -	80	535
Assists in <i>Trulla's</i> triumph - - -	92	966
<i>Taliacotius's</i> sympathetick noses -	9	281
Teeth and swords compared - - -	37	261
Tongue, a help to its volubility -	29	443
Trance described - - -	260	1127
Trimming approved - - -	313	1291
<i>Trulla</i> (the tinker's wench) - - -	40	365
Her resolution - - -	ib.	369
Assists in the bear's relief - - -	67	97
Her lightness - - -	ib.	101
Speech to <i>Cerdon</i> on the relief of the bear	ib.	110
Romantick care of him - - -	68	155
Defeats <i>Hudibras</i> - - -	87	783
Language to him thereon - - -	ib.	785

INDEX.

	Page	Line
<i>Trulla's</i> reply to his answer - - -	88	814
Re-attacks and defeats him - - -	<i>ib.</i>	823
Insults him - - -	89	855
Reply to his answer - - -	90	885
Answer to his reply - - -	<i>ib.</i>	905
Gives him her mantle (a modern example applied) - - -	91	919
Protects him from the fury of the rest - - -	<i>ib.</i>	929
Resolves to exchange him for <i>Crowdero</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>	909
Her resolution approved of - - -	<i>ib.</i>	951
Triumphs over him and <i>Ralpho</i> - - -	92	969
The manner of it - - -	93	975
Puts both in the stocks - - -	<i>ib.</i>	1000
Trusts broken, not so desperate in trial as a neck - - -	139	509
VALOUR, active and passive distinguished - - -	94	1029
Best trial of valour in soldiers - - -	131	249
The effects of too much, or too little - - -	258	1065
Virtue and grace too near a-kin to be coupled - - -	265	1293
WAGERS, fools-arguments - - -	133	298
Wedlock without love compared - - -	134	321
Properly compared - - -	143	648
See Marriages.		
<i>Whacum</i> , <i>Sidrophel's</i> Zany, or journeyman, his qualifications - - -	188	323
Employment in the conjuring trade - - -	189	335
Skill in poetry - - -	<i>ib.</i>	358
Encomium on it - - -	190	384
Receives <i>Hudibras</i> and pumps <i>Ralpho</i> - - -	195	494
Juggle with <i>Sidrophel</i> on <i>Hudibras's</i> errand - - -	194	522
Assists <i>Sidrophel</i> to attack him - - -	210	1055
Throws down his arms, and is wounded - - -	224	1063
Whipping its praises - - -	148 l. 811 to	816
Use, &c. in love - - -	149	84
Examples of it - - -	150	8
Whipping-post described - - -	63	

INDEX.

	Page	Line
The honour and privileges of its tenants	{ p. 148, l. 797 to 810 and 817 to 824	
Widow (<i>Hudibras's</i> mistress) her qualities	73	321
Behaviour on the news of his being in the stocks	127	81
Expostulation on the sight of him there	128	123
Answer to his first address to her	129	153
The conversation continued on the fortune of war, pain, honour, valour, love, and whipping	to 150	895
Answer to his address to her on assurance of having performed his oath	233	187
The dialogue thereon continued	to 258	1053
Answer to his claiming her promise of marriage	243	545
The management and comforts of it debated	to 255	936
Concluded by her with its true motives	ib.	937
Answer to his epistle	360	
Women, their zeal, &c. celebrated	175	775
Passion for precedence	235	169
Arts in amour	354	179
Power over mankind	ib.	191
Out of complaisance to them	ib.	199
Men as much made for them as they for Men	367	239
The advantages on the woman's side	ib.	24
Influence over the men—in politicks.	ib.	255
In church affairs	368	299
In trade	369	308
In magistracy	ib.	307
In war	ib.	311
In promotions	ib.	315
In estates	ib.	321
In heirs to them	ib.	325
Worse for ill usage	ib.	331
Men their fools in the play	370	345



1 6 1943

